# Finite Volume Approximation of the Maxwell's Equations in Nonhomogeneous Media 

CHUNG Tsz Shun Eric

# A Thesis Submitted in Partial Fulfillment of the Requirements for the Degree of Master of Philosophy in 

Mathematics

© The Chinese University of Hong Kong
August, 2000

The Chinese University of Hong Kong holds the copyright of this thesis. Any person(s) intending to use a part or whole of the materials in the thesis in a proposed publication must seek copyright release from the Dean of the Graduate School.

本文的重點是研究含有多種不同物理特性的三維區域內電磁場方程組的數値解法。這類方程通常稱爲交接面問題，數値求解這一類問題的困難主要在於原微分方程組的解在整個物理區域上正則性很低，所以一般數値方法精度比較差。我們將在本文中提出一種有限體積法。我們將充分利用原微分方程的局部光滑性以及特殊處理電磁場在不同介質的交接面上的物理條件，從而使這種有限體積法在非常無結構的網格上至少可達到一階收斂，並且在均匀正則的網格上可達到二階收斂。更爲重要的是，我們的有限體積法自動滿足兩個物理上極爲重要的散度定律。大量的數値例子已充分証明了這種新的數値方法的穩定性及有效性。就我們所知，這是第一個用於求解電磁場交接面問題的二階收斂的數値方法。也是第一次嚴格地全面地給出了有限體積法求解交接面問題的收斂性分析。


#### Abstract

In this thesis, we consider the Maxwell's equations in a three-dimensional polyhedral domain composed of two dialectic materials with different physical parameters. A finite volume method is derived to solve the problem, and a new approach is proposed to handle the physical charateristics of the electromagnetic fields on the interface between the two different materials. The approximate electromagnetic fields are shown to satisfy the two divergence constraints in the discrete level. Convergence analysis will be given for both semi-discrete and fully-discrete problems. In the case of general polyhedral domains, our proposed method is first order convergent in space. The convergence is one order higher when the domain is a cuboid, though the true solution of Maxwell's system lacks enough global regularity in the entire physical domain due to the presence of the discontinuities of the physical coefficients across the interface. For both cases, the convergence in time is always second order. Numerical examples will also be given to consolidate our theortical results. To our knowledge, this is the first finite volume method with second order convergence for solving the Maxwell's equations in non-homogeneous media.


## ACKNOWLEDGMENTS

I would like to express my deepest gratitude to Prof. Jun Zou, my thesis advisor, for his enthusiastic guidiance and precious suggestions throughout the preparation of this thesis. Additional gratefulness is given to Prof. Thomas K. K. Au, Prof. Raymond H. Chan and Prof. L. F. Tam for their valuable discussions. Special thank is added to Mr. K. H. Chan, my colleague, for his information on computer programming.

Eric, Chung Tsz Shun
The Chinese University of Hong Kong
June, 2000.

## Contents

1 Introduction ..... 1
1.1 Applications of Maxwell's equations ..... 1
1.2 Introduction to Maxwell's equations ..... 2
1.3 Historical outline of numerical methods ..... 4
1.4 A new approach ..... 5
2 Mathematical Backgrounds ..... 7
2.1 Sobolev spaces ..... 7
2.2 Tools from functional analysis ..... 8
3 Discretization of Vector Fields ..... 10
3.1 Domain triangulation ..... 10
3.2 Mesh dependent norms ..... 11
3.3 Discrete circulation operators ..... 13
3.4 Discrete flux operators ..... 20
4 Spatial Discretization of the Maxwell's Equations ..... 23
4.1 Derivation ..... 23
4.2 Consistency theory ..... 29
4.3 Convergence theory ..... 33
4.3.1 Polyhedral domain ..... 33
4.3.2 Rectangular domain ..... 38
5 Fully Discretization of the Maxwell's Equations ..... 63
5.1 Derivation ..... 63
5.2 Consistency theory ..... 65
5.3 Convergence theory ..... 69
5.3.1 Polyhedral domain ..... 69
5.3.2 Rectangular domain ..... 77
6 Numerical Tests ..... 97
6.1 Convergence test ..... 97
6.2 Electromagnetic scattering ..... 99
Bibliography ..... 102

## Chapter 1

## Introduction

The Maxwell's equations are a set of physical laws that govern all the electricand magnetic-related systems which we see in our daily life, in the industrial and engineering applications. The solutions of the Maxwell's equations are hence widely needed in the study and design of these systems. Some examples include the systems making use of the electromagnetic wave guide, radiation and wave scattering, and so on. For some complex electromagnetic systems, which may involve many different physical media, the solutions of Maxwell's equations in non-homogeneous media are frequently required.

### 1.1 Applications of Maxwell's equations

First, we present two applications involving solution of the Maxwell's equations.
(I) Target identification.

The solution of Maxwell's equations can be useful in reconstructing the shape of a target. A trial electromagnetic pulse reflected from a known target is compared to that reflected from the desired target. The error can then be obtained. Further iterations then proceed by changing the shape of the known target to reduce the error.

## (II) Aerospace design.

The materials used in the aerospaces are usually multilayered. In order to design an aeorspace which is hard to detect, the modeling of the electromagnetic properties of the multilayered material is required.

### 1.2 Introduction to Maxwell's equations

In this section we introduce the Maxwell's equations in a non-homogeneous domain. For simplicity, we consider a domain occupied by two different dialectic materials. The results of this thesis can be extended to the case that a domain is occupied by many different materials. Let $\Omega$ be a domain in $\mathbb{R}^{3}$ with boundary $\partial \Omega$ and unit outward normal vector $\mathbf{n}$. Let $\epsilon$ be the electric permittivity and $\mu$ be the magnetic permeability of the medium occupied by $\Omega$. For fixed $T>0$, the Maxwell's equations are:

$$
\begin{align*}
\epsilon \frac{\partial \mathbf{E}}{\partial t}-\operatorname{curl} \mathbf{H} & =\mathbf{J} \text { in } \Omega \times(0, T)  \tag{1.1}\\
\mu \frac{\partial \mathbf{H}}{\partial t}+\operatorname{curl} \mathbf{E} & =0 \quad \text { in } \Omega \times(0, T)  \tag{1.2}\\
\operatorname{div}(\epsilon \mathbf{E}) & =\rho \text { in } \Omega \times(0, T)  \tag{1.3}\\
\operatorname{div}(\mu \mathbf{H}) & =0 \quad \text { in } \Omega \times(0, T) \tag{1.4}
\end{align*}
$$

Here $\mathbf{E}(x, t)$ and $\mathbf{H}(x, t)$ denote the electric and magnetic fields respectively. $\mathbf{J}(x, t)$ is the known applied current and $\rho(x, t)$ is the charge density. We remark here that (1.1) is called the Maxwell-Ampere law which states that any change in electric field would produce magnetic field. (1.2) is called the Faraday's law which states that any change in magnetic field would produce electric field. (1.3) and (1.4) are called the Gauss's law which describe the charge properties of electric and magnetic fields respectively.

Let $\Omega_{1}$ be another domain such that $\bar{\Omega}_{1} \subset \Omega$, and let $\Gamma=\partial \Omega_{1}$ with unit outward normal vector $\mathbf{m}$. We also let $\Omega_{2}=\Omega \backslash \bar{\Omega}_{1}$. We assume that $\Omega_{1}$ and $\Omega_{2}$
are occupied by two different dialectic materials so that the parameters $\epsilon$ and $\mu$ are discontinuous across the interface $\Gamma$. We consider only the case that the parameters are two piecewise constant functions in $\Omega$ defined as

$$
\epsilon=\left\{\begin{array}{lll}
\epsilon_{1} & \text { in } & \Omega_{1} \\
\epsilon_{2} & \text { in } & \Omega_{2}
\end{array} \quad, \quad \mu=\left\{\begin{array}{lll}
\mu_{1} & \text { in } & \Omega_{1} \\
\mu_{2} & \text { in } & \Omega_{2}
\end{array}\right.\right.
$$

where $\epsilon_{i}, \mu_{i}(i=1,2)$ are positive constants. Our numerical method, which will be presented later, is also applicable when the two parameters $\epsilon_{i}, \mu_{i}(i=1,2)$ are smooth functions.

We suppose that the Maxwell's equations (1.1)-(1.4) satisfy a perfect conductor boundary condition

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathbf{E} \times \mathbf{n}=0 \quad \text { on } \quad \partial \Omega \times(0, T), \tag{1.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

and initial conditions

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathbf{E}(x, 0)=\mathbf{E}_{0}(x) \quad \text { and } \quad \mathbf{H}(x, 0)=\mathbf{H}_{0}(x) \quad \forall x \in \Omega, \tag{1.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

such that the functions $\mathbf{E}_{0}(x)$ and $\mathbf{H}_{0}(x)$ satisfy

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{div}\left(\epsilon \mathbf{E}_{0}\right)=\rho(x, 0) \quad \text { and } \quad \operatorname{div}\left(\mu \mathbf{H}_{0}\right)=0 \tag{1.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

The boundary condition (1.5) for the electric field $\mathbf{E}$ implies the following boundary condition for the magnetic field $\mathbf{H}$ :

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{curl} \mathbf{H} \times \mathbf{n}=-\mathbf{J} \times \mathbf{n} \quad \text { on } \quad \partial \Omega \times(0, T) \tag{1.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

We further assume that the following continuity equation holds:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\partial \rho}{\partial t}=\operatorname{div} \mathbf{J} \tag{1.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

which represents the conservation of electric charge. Throughout the paper, the jump of any function $A$ across the interface $\Gamma$ is defined as

$$
[A]:=\left.A_{2}\right|_{\Gamma}-\left.A_{1}\right|_{\Gamma}
$$

where $A_{i}=\left.A\right|_{\Omega_{i}}$ for $i=1,2$. It is known physically that the electric and magnetic fields $\mathbf{E}$ and $\mathbf{H}$ must satisfy the following jump conditions across the interface $\Gamma$ :

$$
\begin{align*}
& {[\mathbf{E} \times \mathbf{m}]=0 \quad, \quad[\epsilon \mathbf{E} \cdot \mathbf{m}]=\rho_{\Gamma}}  \tag{1.10}\\
& {[\mathbf{H} \times \mathbf{m}]=\mathbf{J}_{\Gamma} \quad, \quad[\mu \mathbf{H} \cdot \mathbf{m}]=0} \tag{1.11}
\end{align*}
$$

where $\rho_{\Gamma}(x, t)$ is the surface charge density while $\mathbf{J}_{\Gamma}(x, t)$ is the surface current density. In addition, we will adopt the following constitutive relations

$$
\begin{align*}
& \mathbf{D}=\epsilon \mathbf{E}  \tag{1.12}\\
& \mathbf{B}=\mu \mathbf{H} \tag{1.13}
\end{align*}
$$

where $\mathbf{D}$ and $\mathbf{B}$ are the electric flux density and the magnetic flux density respectively.

### 1.3 Historical outline of numerical methods

In this section, we give a brief outline of some existing numerical methods and related aspects in numerical solution of the Maxwell's equations.

To our knowledge, the first numerical methods was established by Yee [24] in 1966. In [24], a standard finite difference method is employed to approximate both the spatial and time derivatives in the curl Maxwell's equations (1.1)-(1.2) in homogeneous domain. However, the convergence analysis for this method is open for a long time, and in 1992, Monk and Süli [18] provide a proof for the second order convergence of Yee's scheme on nonuniform grids.

In order to handle complicated geometry of domains, finite element and finite volume methods are introduced. In Monk [17] and Raviart [22], a fully discrete finite element method is used to solve the decoupled time-dependent Maxwell's equations in homogeneous domain. In addition, the second order convergence analysis for the stationary problem is provided. In Ciarlet and Zou [8], a convergence analysis for the fully discrete time dependent problem is given. In Chen
and Yee [3], a finite volume method is used to solve the Maxwell's equations in homogeneous domain, and in Nicolaides and Wang [20], convergence analysis for both semi-discrete and fully-discrete schemes are also provided.

However, the aforemensioned methods are concerned with only homogeneous medium cases. For many real applications, one is often encountered with the solution of the Maxwell's equations in non-homogeneous media. Several attempts have been made to handle the interface Maxwell's problems [3] [4] [23]. For example, Chen and Yee [3] studied an FDTD/FVTD hybrid method for the interface problem, assuming both the tangential components of the electric and magnetic fields are continuous across the interface and the electric field is tangentially piecewise constant on the interface. Chen, Du and Zou [4] proposed an edge finite element method for solving the Maxwell's system with very general inhomogeneous interface conditions and developed a general framework for its convergence analysis.

### 1.4 A new approach

The previously mensioned finite volume methods can only handle limited cases, namely, homogeneous domains and non-homogeneous domains with special interface conditions. In this section and the following chapters, we present a new finite volume approach to solve the Maxwell's equations in non-homogeneous media (cf. Chung and Zou [6]).

One of the improvements over the existing methods of our proposed method is that it can deal with inhomogeneous interface conditions, whereas the existing methods can only handle homogeneous interface conditions. In terms of implementation, our proposed method suggests a simple approach to handle the interface conditions. On the other hand, the numerical solution to the Maxwell's system found by our method can be proved to satisfy the two divergence con-
straints in discrete sense, which ensures physically consistent solution. In literature, we seldom find any argument discussing if the numerical solution of a method satisfies the divergence constraints.

In spite of the derivation of numerical scheme, the main part of this thesis is on the convergence analysis of the method. We will give the convergence analysis of both semi-discrete and fully discrete schemes. As for any interface problem, the true solution of the Maxwell's system has very low global regularity, namely, it is only in the space $H^{1}(\Omega)$. This fact greatly produces tremendous difficulty in dealing with the convergence analysis. However, despite low global regularity of solutions, it can be shown that, as for homogeneous domains in [20], our proposed method, with respect to spatial variables, is first order convergent for polyhedral domains and second order convergent for rectangular domains. Under a CFL stability condition, the fully discrete scheme is second order convergent in time.

In this thesis, we only consider the case when the domain is a polyhedron. In many real applications, however, we always encounter with smooth domains and any other irregular domains. For those cases, though they cannot be handled by our method directly, but the theory in this thesis can be further generalized to solve those problems without essential difficulties.

The thesis is organised as follows. In Chapter 2, some Sobolev space theory and related functional analytic tools will be presented. In Chapter 3, we will discuss the finite volume discretization of the domain. The discrete analog of divergence and curl operators will be defined. Then, we will prove discrete forms of some famous theorems in vector field theory and functional analysis. In Chapter 4 and Chapter 5, we will derive, respectively, the spatial and fully discretization of the Maxwell's equations. In addition, we show how the semi-discrete and fully discrete solutions satisfy the two divergence constraints in discrete level. A complete convergence analysis for both schemes will also be given. In Chapter 6, two numerical examples will be shown to consolidate our theory.

## Chapter 2

## Mathematical Backgrounds

In this chapter, we present some mathematical notations and basic mathematical tools that will be used in our subsequent numerical analysis.

### 2.1 Sobolev spaces

Let $m$ be a nonnegative integer and $1 \leq p<\infty$, we define the Sobolev space

$$
W^{m, p}(\Omega)=\left\{u \in L^{p}(\Omega) \quad ; \quad \partial^{\alpha} u \in L^{p}(\Omega) \quad \forall|\alpha| \leq m\right\},
$$

which is equipped with the norm

$$
\|u\|_{W^{m, p}(\Omega)}=\left(\sum_{0 \leq|\alpha| \leq m}\left\|\partial^{\alpha} u\right\|_{L^{p}(\Omega)}^{p}\right)^{1 / p}
$$

and the semi-norm

$$
|u|_{W^{m, p}(\Omega)}=\left(\sum_{|\alpha|=m}\left\|\partial^{\alpha} u\right\|_{L^{p}(\Omega)}^{p}\right)^{1 / p} .
$$

Here $\partial^{\alpha} u$ denotes the $\alpha$-th order weak derivative of $u$. When $p=2$, we write $H^{m}(\Omega)=W^{m, 2}(\Omega)$ which is indeed a Hilbert space. Let $\mathbf{u}=\left(u_{1}, u_{2}, u_{3}\right) \in \mathbb{R}^{3}$. We say $\mathbf{u} \in W^{m, p}(\Omega)^{3}$ if and only if $u_{i} \in W^{m, p}(\Omega)$ for $i=1,2,3$. We extend the norm in $W^{m, p}(\Omega)^{3}$ in the usual way, namely

$$
\|\mathbf{u}\|_{W^{m, p}(\Omega)^{3}}=\left(\sum_{i=1}^{3}\left\|u_{i}\right\|_{W^{m, p}(\Omega)}^{p}\right)^{1 / p}
$$

and extend similarly for the semi-norm. Note that same definitions are adopted for $\Omega_{1}$ and $\Omega_{2}$.

By $L^{p}(0, T ; X)$ we mean the set of all strongly measurable functions $u(t, \cdot)$ from $[0, T]$ into the Banach space $X$ such that

$$
\int_{0}^{T}\|u(t)\|_{X}^{p} d t<\infty \quad \text { for } \quad 1 \leq p<\infty
$$

where the integral is understood in the Bochner sense. Similar to $W^{m, p}(\Omega)$, we define

$$
W^{m, p}(0, T ; X)=\left\{u \in L^{p}(0, T ; X) \quad ; \quad \frac{\partial^{\alpha} u}{\partial t^{\alpha}} \in L^{p}(0, T ; X) \quad \forall|\alpha| \leq m\right\}
$$

with norm

$$
\|u\|_{W^{m, p}(0, T ; X)}=\left(\sum_{0 \leq|\alpha| \leq m}\left\|\frac{\partial^{\alpha} u}{\partial t^{\alpha}}\right\|_{X}^{p}\right)^{1 / p} .
$$

When $p=2$, we write $W^{m, p}(0, T ; X)$ as $H^{m}(0, T ; X)$. Similarly, $\mathbf{u} \in L^{p}(0, T ; X)^{3}$ if and only if $u_{i} \in L^{p}(0, T ; X)$, for $i=1,2,3$. The norm and semi-norm in $L^{p}(0, T ; X)^{3}$ are defined in a similar fashion.

Furthermore, $\mathbf{u} \in C^{m} .(\Omega)^{3}$ if and only if $u_{i} \in C^{m}(\Omega)$ for $i=1,2,3$ where $C^{m}(\Omega)$ denotes the space of $m$ times differentiable functions in $\Omega$ with norm

$$
\left\|u_{i}\right\|_{C^{m}(\Omega)}=\sum_{\alpha=0}^{m} \sup _{\Omega}\left|\partial^{\alpha} u_{i}\right| .
$$

Similarly, $C^{m}(0, T ; X)$ denotes the space of $m$ times differentiable functions from $[0, T]$ into $X$ with norm

$$
\|u\|_{C^{m}(0, T ; X)}=\sum_{\alpha=0}^{m} \sup _{0 \leq t \leq T}\left\|\partial^{\alpha} u(t)\right\|_{X} .
$$

### 2.2 Tools from functional analysis

In this section, we quote without proof some well known results in literature. These results are very useful tools for the convergence analysis of our finite volume method which will be presented later.

The fisrt one is called the Bramble-Hilbert lemma.
Theorem 2.1 (Bramble-Hilbert lemma) Let $\Omega$ be a bounded domain in $\mathbb{R}^{n}$ with a Lipschitz continuous boundary. Let $f$ be a continuous linear functional on the space $W^{k+1, p}(\Omega)$, for some integer $k \geq 0$ and some real number $p \in[0, \infty]$, such that,

$$
f(P)=0,
$$

for any polynomial $P$ of degree less than or equal to $k$. Then for all $v \in W^{k+1, p}(\Omega)$,

$$
|f(v)| \leq K(\Omega)\|f\|_{W^{k+1, p}(\Omega)}^{*}|v|_{W^{k+1, p}(\Omega)},
$$

for some constant $K(\Omega)$ depends only on $\Omega$ and $\|\cdot\|_{W^{k+1, p}(\Omega)}^{*}$ denotes the norm in the dual space of $W^{k+1, p}(\Omega)$.

The second one is called the Sobolev embedding theorem. We only present part of it. For a full version, we refer readers to Adams [1].

Theorem 2.2 (Sobolev embedding theorem) Let $\Omega$ be a bounded domain in $\mathbb{R}^{n}$ with a Lipschitz continuous boundary. Suppose that $m p>n$. Then

$$
W^{j+m, p}(\Omega) \hookrightarrow C^{j}(\bar{\Omega}),
$$

for any integer $j \geq 0$.
In the above theorem, the notation $W^{j+m, p}(\Omega) \hookrightarrow C^{j}(\bar{\Omega})$ means the following: for any $u \in W^{j+m, p}(\Omega)$, we have $u \in C^{j}(\bar{\Omega})$ and there exist a constant $K(\Omega)$ depends only on $\Omega$ and indepenent of $u$ such that

$$
\|u\|_{C^{j}(\bar{\Omega})} \leq K(\Omega)\|u\|_{W^{j+m, p}(\Omega)} .
$$

When $\Omega=(a, b)$, we have the following special case.
Theorem 2.3 Let $\Omega=(a, b)$. Then for $1 \leq p<\infty$,

$$
W^{1+j, p}(a, b) \hookrightarrow C^{j}([a, b]),
$$

for any integer $j \geq 0$.

## Chapter 3

## Discretization of Vector Fields

In this chapter we will present the finite volume discretization of the two important differential operators: div and curl. They are cruial for our subsequent derivation of numerical approximations. In addition, we will provide discrete analog of some famous theorems in vector field theory.

### 3.1 Domain triangulation

We now discuss the triangulation of the domain $\Omega$. It is actually the VoronoiDelanuay triangulation which has some useful properties that allow us to derive the numerical schemes in the subsequent chapters. Most notations used below are borrowed from Nicolaides, Wang and Wu [19] [20] [21]. For details of VoronoiDelanuay triangulation, see Fortune [12].

Assume that both $\Omega$ and $\Omega_{1}$ are polyhedra. We triangulate $\Omega$ by using standard finite element type tetrahedra which we call primal elements. This triangulation of $\Omega$ is not arbitrary in the sense that primal faces, that is the face of primal element, should align with the interface $\Gamma$. That means the two triangulations in $\Omega_{1}$ and $\Omega_{2}$ match each other on $\Gamma$ as well as they are combined into a standard triangulation of the whole domain $\Omega$. A primal element with as least
one face lying on $\Gamma$ is called an interface primal element. Similarly, a primal face and a primal edge lying on $\Gamma$ is called an interface primal face and an interface primal edge respectively. We denote by $h$ the maximum side length of all primal elements. We assume that the ratios of any two edges of an individual primal element are uniformly bounded from above and below as $h$ tends to 0 . This is equivalent to say that all dihedral angles of each tetrahedron are acute.

The dual elements are formed by connecting adjacent circumcenters of primal elements. In the case of a primal element with face on the boundary, connect the circumcenter to the boundary face. It is easy to see that the dual elements are convex polyhedra with faces being convex polygons. However, there are some dual faces belonging to both $\Omega_{1}$ and $\Omega_{2}$. Owing to this fact, some definitions and convergence analysis related to dual elements are more complicated and are not similar to those for primal elements. We call the dual elements, dual faces and dual edges with non-empty intersection with both $\Omega_{1}$ and $\Omega_{2}$ the inteface dual elements, interface dual faces and interface dual edges respectively. With these definitions, we conclude with the following properties concerning the primal and dual meshes. First, primal edges are orthogonal to and in one-to-one correspondence with dual faces. Secondly, dual edges are also orthogonal to and in one-to-one correspondence with primal faces. These orthogonalities are the key to the derivation of our numerical schemes.

### 3.2 Mesh dependent norms

Let $N$ and $L$ be the number of primal elements and dual elements respectively. Let $F$ be the number of primal faces (or dual edges) and $M$ be the number of primal edges (or dual faces). Assume that these quantities, as well as primal nodes and dual nodes, are numbered sequentially in some way. The individual elements, faces, edges, nodes of the primal mesh are denoted by $\tau_{i}, \kappa_{j}, \sigma_{k}$ and
$\nu_{l}$ respectively. Those quantities relating dual mesh are denoted by primed form such as $\tau_{i}^{\prime}$. A direction is assigned to each primal and dual edge by the rule that positive direction maens it points from lower node number to higher node number. Direction is also assigned to each primal and dual face such that it is the same as the corresponding dual and primal edge. We also denote $F_{1}$ the number of interior primal faces (or dual edges) and $M_{1}$ the number of interior primal edges (or dual faces).

Let $s_{j}$ be the area of $\kappa_{j}$ and $h_{j}^{\prime}$ be the length of $\sigma_{j}^{\prime}$. We define

$$
\bar{h}_{j}^{\prime}= \begin{cases}\mu_{1}^{-1} h_{j}^{\prime} & \text { if } \quad \sigma_{j}^{\prime} \in \Omega_{1} \\ \mu_{2}^{-1} h_{j}^{\prime} & \text { if } \sigma_{j}^{\prime} \in \Omega_{2} \\ \left(\mu_{1}^{-1} a_{j}+\mu_{2}^{-1}\left(1-a_{j}\right)\right) h_{j}^{\prime} & \text { otherwise }\end{cases}
$$

where $0<a_{j}<1$ denotes the ratio of the length of the portion of $\sigma_{j}^{\prime}$ that belongs to $\Omega_{1}$. For any $u$ and $v$ in $\mathbb{R}^{F_{1}}$, we introduce an mesh and parameter dependent inner product defined by

$$
\begin{equation*}
(u, v)_{W}:=\sum_{\kappa_{j} \in \Omega} u_{j} v_{j} s_{j} \bar{h}_{j}^{\prime}=\left(S u, D^{\prime} v\right)=\left(D^{\prime} u, S v\right) \tag{3.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $S:=\operatorname{diag}\left(s_{j}\right)$ and $D^{\prime}:=\operatorname{diag}\left(\bar{h}_{j}^{\prime}\right)$ are $F_{1} \times F_{1}$ diagonal matrices, $(\cdot, \cdot)$ denotes the standard Euclidean inner product. With this inner product, the associated norm is defined as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\|u\|_{W}:=(u, u)_{W}^{\frac{1}{2}} . \tag{3.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

Clearly, this norm is equivalent to the standard discrete $L^{2}$-norm. Now, let $s_{j}^{\prime}$ be the area of $\kappa_{j}^{\prime}, h_{j}$ be the length of $\sigma_{j}$ and let

$$
\bar{s}_{j}^{\prime}= \begin{cases}\epsilon_{1} s_{j}^{\prime} & \text { if } \quad \kappa_{j}^{\prime} \in \Omega_{1} \\ \epsilon_{2} s_{j}^{\prime} & \text { if } \quad \kappa_{j}^{\prime} \in \Omega_{2} \\ \left(\epsilon_{1} b_{j}+\epsilon_{2}\left(1-b_{j}\right)\right) s_{j}^{\prime} & \text { otherwise }\end{cases}
$$

where $0<b_{j}<1$ denotes the ratio of the area of the portion of $\kappa_{j}^{\prime}$ that belongs to $\Omega_{1}$. Similarly, we define an mesh and parameter dependent inner product in $\mathbb{R}^{M_{1}}$ by

$$
\begin{equation*}
(u, v)_{W^{\prime}}:=\sum_{\kappa_{j}^{\prime} \in \Omega} u_{j} v_{j} \bar{s}_{j}^{\prime} h_{j}=\left(S^{\prime} u, D v\right)=\left(D u, S^{\prime} v\right) \tag{3.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $S^{\prime}:=\operatorname{diag}\left(\bar{s}_{j}^{\prime}\right)$ and $D:=\operatorname{diag}\left(h_{j}\right)$ are $M_{1} \times M_{1}$ diagonal matrices. The associated norm is

$$
\begin{equation*}
\|u\|_{W^{\prime}}:=(u, u)_{W^{\prime}}^{\frac{1}{2}} \tag{3.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

which is again equivalent to the discrete $L^{2}$-norm.
Denote by $M_{\Gamma}$ the number of inteface primal edges. Define a $M_{\Gamma} \times M_{\Gamma}$ diagonal matrix $D_{\Gamma}:=\operatorname{diag}\left(h_{j}\right)$ with components corresponding to interface primal edges. Now, for any vectors $u, v \in \mathbb{R}^{M_{\Gamma}}$, we define the following inner product

$$
\begin{equation*}
(u, v)_{W_{\Gamma}}:=\sum_{\sigma_{j} \in \Gamma} h_{j}^{2} u_{j} v_{j}=\left(D_{\Gamma} u, D_{\Gamma} v\right), \tag{3.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

with the associated norm

$$
\begin{equation*}
\|u\|_{W_{\Gamma}}:=(u, u)_{W_{\Gamma}}^{\frac{1}{2}} . \tag{3.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

### 3.3 Discrete circulation operators

In this section, we present the finite volume discretization of the curl operator. Furthermore, discrete forms of some famous theorems are provided.

Let $\sigma_{j} \in \partial \kappa_{i}$. We say $\sigma_{j}$ is oriented positively along $\partial \kappa_{i}$ if the direction of $\sigma_{j}$ agrees with the direction of $\partial \kappa_{i}$ formed by the right hand rule with the thumb pointing to the direction of $\sigma_{i}^{\prime}$. Otherwise, we say $\sigma_{j}$ is oriented negatively along $\partial \kappa_{i}$. For each interior primal face $\kappa_{i}$, we define discrete circulation by

$$
\begin{equation*}
(C u)_{\kappa_{i}}:=\sum_{\sigma_{j} \in \partial \kappa_{i}} u_{j} \tilde{h}_{j}, \tag{3.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

where

$$
\tilde{h}_{j}=\left\{\begin{aligned}
h_{j} & \text { if } \sigma_{j} \text { is oriented positively along } \partial \kappa_{i} \\
-h_{j} & \text { if } \sigma_{j} \text { is oriented negatively along } \partial \kappa_{i}
\end{aligned}\right.
$$

Similarly, for each interior dual face $\kappa_{i}^{\prime}$ the discrete circulation is defined as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(C^{\prime} u\right)_{\kappa_{i}^{\prime}}:=\sum_{\sigma_{j}^{\prime} \in \partial \kappa_{i}^{\prime}} u_{j} \tilde{h}_{j}^{\prime} \tag{3.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

where

$$
\tilde{h}_{j}^{\prime}=\left\{\begin{aligned}
\bar{h}_{j}^{\prime} & \text { if } \sigma_{j}^{\prime} \text { is oriented postively along } \partial \kappa_{i}^{\prime} \\
-\bar{h}_{j}^{\prime} & \text { if } \sigma_{j}^{\prime} \text { is oriented negatively along } \partial \kappa_{i}^{\prime}
\end{aligned}\right.
$$

Clearly, $C$ and $C^{\prime}$ are linear operators mapping from $\mathbb{R}^{M}$ to $\mathbb{R}^{F_{1}}$ and $\mathbb{R}^{F_{1}}$ to $\mathbb{R}^{M_{1}}$ respectively. We remark that (3.7) and (3.8) are discrete analog of the integrals

$$
\int_{\kappa_{i}} \operatorname{curl} \mathbf{E} \cdot \mathbf{n}_{i} d \sigma \text { and } \int_{\kappa_{i}^{\prime}} \operatorname{curl} \mathbf{H} \cdot \mathbf{n}_{i} d \sigma
$$

by virtue of the Stokes' theorem where $\mathbf{n}_{i}$ represents the unit normal vector to both primal and dual faces.

With the definition of the discrete circulation operator $C$, we define the following inner product

$$
\begin{equation*}
(u, v)_{V}:=\sum_{\kappa_{i} \in \Omega}(C u)_{i}(C v)_{i} s_{i}^{-1} \bar{h}_{i}^{\prime}=\left(S^{-1} C u, D^{\prime} C v\right)=\left(D^{\prime} C u, S^{-1} C u\right) \tag{3.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

for any vectors $u, v \in \mathbb{R}^{M}$ and its associated norm

$$
\begin{equation*}
\|u\|_{V}:=(u, u)_{V}^{\frac{1}{2}} \tag{3.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

Clearly, this norm is equivalent to the discrete $H^{1}$-norm.
For each strictly interior dual edge $\sigma_{j}^{\prime}$, that is, both end points of $\sigma_{j}^{\prime}$ lie in $\Omega$, we define a row vector whose $i$ th component is the sign of the orientation of $\sigma_{j}^{\prime}$ relative to the $i$ th strictly interior dual face. Collecting these vectors, we have a
$F_{1} \times M_{1}$ matrix $G$ defined as

$$
(G)_{j i}:=\left\{\begin{aligned}
1 & \text { if } \sigma_{j}^{\prime} \text { is oriented positively along } \partial \kappa_{i}^{\prime} \\
-1 & \text { if } \sigma_{j}^{\prime} \text { is oriented negatively along } \partial \kappa_{i}^{\prime} \\
0 & \text { if } \sigma_{j}^{\prime} \text { does not meet } \partial \kappa_{i}^{\prime} .
\end{aligned}\right.
$$

Let $w \in \mathbb{R}^{M}$ be a vector whose $k$ th component is the value assigned on the $k$ th primal edge. Let $w_{1} \in \mathbb{R}^{M_{1}}$ be the restriction of $w$ to the interior primal edges. Denote by $\left.w\right|_{\partial \Omega}$ the components of $w$ on the boundary. Likewise, denote by $v \in \mathbb{R}^{F_{1}}$ the vector whose $j$ th component represents a value on the $j$ th interior dual edge.

Lemma 3.1 With the above definitions of $w, w_{1}$ and $v$ together with $\left.w\right|_{\partial \Omega}=0$, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
C w=G D w_{1}, \tag{3.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
C^{\prime} v=G^{T} D^{\prime} v \tag{3.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. To see (3.11) is true, we consider the $i$ th component to both sides. Note that the $i$ th component corresponds to the primal face $\kappa_{i}$. By definition (3.7) and the fact that $\left.w\right|_{\partial \Omega}=0$, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
(C w)_{\kappa_{i}} & =\sum_{\sigma_{j} \in \partial \kappa_{i}} w_{j} \tilde{h}_{j} \\
& =\sum_{j=1}^{M_{1}} c_{j} w_{j} h_{j},
\end{aligned}
$$

where

$$
c_{j}=\left\{\begin{aligned}
1 & \text { if } \sigma_{j} \text { is oriented postively along } \partial \kappa_{i} \\
-1 & \text { if } \sigma_{j} \text { is oriented negatively along } \partial \kappa_{i} \\
0 & \text { if } \sigma_{j} \text { does not meet } \partial \kappa_{i}
\end{aligned}\right.
$$

and $\sigma_{j}$ 's are interior primal edges. For the right hand side, we have

$$
\left(G D w_{1}\right)_{\kappa_{i}}=\sum_{j=1}^{M_{1}} g_{j} h_{j} w_{j}
$$

where

$$
g_{j}=\left\{\begin{aligned}
1 & \text { if } \sigma_{i}^{\prime} \text { is oriented postively along } \partial \kappa_{j}^{\prime} \\
-1 & \text { if } \sigma_{i}^{\prime} \text { is oriented negatively along } \partial \kappa_{j}^{\prime} \\
0 & \text { if } \sigma_{i}^{\prime} \text { does not meet } \partial \kappa_{j}^{\prime}
\end{aligned}\right.
$$

is the $i$ th row of the matrix $G$. By the orthogonality between primal and dual meshes, we conclude that $c_{j}$ and $g_{j}$ are the same which implies (3.11). The proof for (3.12) can be done by similar techniques.

Now, we have the following result.
Lemma 3.2 Using the same definitions in Lemma 3.1, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(C w, D^{\prime} v\right)=\left(C^{\prime} v, D w_{1}\right) \tag{3.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. Applying Lemma 3.1, we have

$$
\begin{array}{rlrl}
\left(C^{\prime} v, D w_{1}\right) & =\left(G^{T} D^{\prime} v, D w_{1}\right) & & \text { by }(3.12) \\
& =\left(D^{\prime} v, G D w_{1}\right) & \\
& =\left(D^{\prime} v, C w\right) & & \text { by }(3.11) .
\end{array}
$$

We remark that (3.13) is the discrete form of the Green's formula

$$
\int_{\Omega} \operatorname{curl} \mathbf{E} \cdot \mathbf{B} d x=\int_{\Omega} \operatorname{curl} \mathbf{B} \cdot \mathbf{E} d x
$$

which holds when $\mathbf{E} \times \mathbf{n}=0$ on $\partial \Omega$.
Concerning with the matrix $G$, we have the following lemma.

Lemma 3.3 Let $L$ be the number of interior primal nodes. Then

$$
\operatorname{rank}(G)=E_{1}-L
$$

Proof. Recall that each column of $G$ corresponds a dual face. Take any interior dual element. Without loss of generality, let $\kappa_{1}^{\prime}, \kappa_{2}^{\prime}, \cdots, \kappa_{l}^{\prime}$ be dual faces lying on the boundary of the chosen dual element. Then consider a linear combination of the corresponding columns of $G$ :

$$
a_{1} c_{1}+a_{2} c_{2}+\cdots+a_{l} c_{l}
$$

where $c_{i}$ denotes the $i$-th column of $G$. We choose $a_{i}$ in the following way. If the direction of $\kappa_{j}^{\prime}$ is pointing outward to the dual element, choose $a_{j}=1$. Otherwise, choose $a_{j}=-1$. Clearly, we have

$$
a_{1} c_{1}+a_{2} c_{2}+\cdots+a_{l} c_{l}=0
$$

Since each interior dual element corresponds to a interior primal node, we have the desired result.

We emphasis here that all the above results are valid when both $\Omega$ and $\Omega_{1}$ are rectangular domains. In this case, both primal and dual elements are cuboids while both primal and dual faces are rectangles. From Lemma 3.3, we know that the matrix $G^{T} G$ is positive semi-definite. So, $\lambda\left(G^{T} G\right) \geq 0$ where $\lambda\left(G^{T} G\right)$ represents eigenvalues of $G^{T} G$. Denote $\lambda_{\min }^{+}\left(G^{T} G\right)$ be the smallest positive eigenvalue of $G^{T} G$. Then, we have the following result.

Lemma 3.4 Assume that both $\Omega$ and $\Omega_{1}$ are rectangular domains. Then there exist a constant $K$ independent of $h$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\lambda_{\min }^{+}\left(G^{T} G\right) \geq K h^{2} \tag{3.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

With Lemma 3.4, we have the following
Lemma 3.5 Assume that both $\Omega$ and $\Omega_{1}$ are rectangular domains. Let $u \in \mathbb{R}^{M}$ with $\left.u\right|_{\partial \Omega}=0$ and $C u \neq 0$. Then there exist a constant $K$ independent of $h$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\|u\|_{W^{\prime}} \leq K\|u\|_{V} \tag{3.15}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. By the definition of $V$-norm, we have

$$
\|u\|_{V}^{2}=\left(D^{\prime} S^{-1} C u, C u\right) \geq K h^{-1}(C u, C u)
$$

By Lemma 3.2 and $C u \neq 0$, we have

$$
0<(C u, C u)=\left(G^{T} G D u, D u\right)
$$

and consequently $G^{T} G D u \neq 0$. Let $\lambda_{j}, j=1,2, \cdots, M_{1}$, be the eigenvalues of $G^{T} G$ and let $\omega_{j}$ be the corresponding eigenvectors. Since $G^{T} G$ is positive semi-definite, let $M^{*}$ be such that

$$
\begin{array}{ll}
\lambda_{j}=0, & \text { for } \quad 1 \leq j \leq M^{*} \\
\lambda_{j}>0, & \text { for } \quad M^{*}+1 \leq j \leq M_{1}
\end{array}
$$

Notice that we can choose $\omega_{j}$, for $j=1,2, \cdots, M_{1}$, such that they form an orthonormal basis for $\mathbb{R}^{M_{1}}$. So, we can express $D u$ into the following form

$$
D u=\sum_{j=1}^{M_{1}}\left(D u, \omega_{j}\right) \omega_{j}
$$

By the fact that $G^{T} G D u \neq 0$ and $\left\{\omega_{j}\right\}_{j=1}^{M^{*}}$ spans the null space of $G^{T} G$, we have

$$
\left(D u, \omega_{j}\right)=0, \quad \text { for } \quad 1 \leq j \leq M^{*}
$$

and consequently,

$$
D u=\sum_{j=M^{*}+1}^{M_{1}}\left(D u, \omega_{j}\right) \omega_{j} .
$$

Hence, we obtain

$$
\begin{aligned}
(C u, C u) & =\left(G^{T} G D u, D u\right) \\
& =\left(G^{T} G \sum_{j=M^{*}+1}^{M_{1}}\left(D u, \omega_{j}\right) \omega_{j}, \sum_{j=M^{*}+1}^{M_{1}}\left(D u, \omega_{j}\right) \omega_{j}\right) \\
& =\left(\sum_{j=M^{*}+1}^{M_{1}}\left(D u, \omega_{j}\right) G^{T} G \omega_{j}, \sum_{j=M^{*}+1}^{M_{1}}\left(D u, \omega_{j}\right) \omega_{j}\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

Since $G^{T} G \omega_{j}=\lambda_{j} \omega_{j}$, we finally obtain

$$
\begin{aligned}
(C u, C u) & =\left(\sum_{j=M^{*}+1}^{M_{1}}\left(D u, \omega_{j}\right) \lambda_{j} \omega_{j}, \sum_{j=M^{*}+1}^{M_{1}}\left(D u, \omega_{j}\right) \omega_{j}\right) \\
& \geq \min _{M^{*}+1 \leq j \leq M_{1}} \lambda_{j}\left(\sum_{j=M^{*}+1}^{M_{1}}\left(D u, \omega_{j}\right) \omega_{j}, \sum_{j=M^{*}+1}^{M_{1}}\left(D u, \omega_{j}\right) \omega_{j}\right) \\
& =\min _{M^{*}+1 \leq j \leq M_{1}} \lambda_{j}(D u, D u) .
\end{aligned}
$$

Hence,

$$
\begin{aligned}
\|u\|_{V}^{2} & \geq K h^{-1} \lambda_{\min }^{+}\left(G^{T} G\right)(D u, D u) \\
& =K h^{-1} \lambda_{\min }^{+}\left(G^{T} G\right)\left(D S^{\prime-1} S^{\prime} u, D u\right) \\
& \geq K h^{-2} \lambda_{\min }^{+}\left(G^{T} G\right)\|u\|_{W^{\prime}}^{2} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Then (3.15) follows from (3.14).

We remark here that (3.15) is the discrete analog of the following Poincare's inequality:

$$
\int_{\Omega}|u|^{2} d x \leq K \int_{\Omega}|\nabla u|^{2} d x
$$

for any $u \in H_{0}^{1}(\Omega)$.

### 3.4 Discrete flux operators

In this section, we give the finite volume discretization of the divergence operator. We also provide the discrete versions of some famous results in vector field theory.

Let $\tau_{i}$ be a primal element and $\kappa_{j} \in \partial \tau_{i}$ be a primal face. We say $\kappa_{j}$ is oriented positively along $\partial \tau_{i}$ if the dual edge $\sigma_{j}^{\prime}$ on $\kappa_{j}$ is directed toward the outside of $\tau_{i}$. Otherwise we say $\kappa_{j}$ is oriented negatively along $\partial \tau_{i}$. For each primal element $\tau_{i}$ we define a discrete flux by

$$
\begin{equation*}
(\mathcal{D} u)_{i}:=\sum_{\kappa_{j} \in \partial \tau_{i}} u_{j} \tilde{s}_{j}, \quad \forall u \in \mathbb{R}^{F_{1}} \tag{3.16}
\end{equation*}
$$

where no components of $u$ related to the boundary faces are involved, and $\tilde{s}_{j}$ is given by

$$
\tilde{s}_{j}=\left\{\begin{aligned}
s_{j} & \text { if } \kappa_{j} \text { is oriented positively along } \partial \tau_{i} \\
-s_{j} & \text { if } \kappa_{j} \text { is oriented negatively along } \partial \tau_{i}
\end{aligned}\right.
$$

The mapping $\mathcal{D}$ is the discrete version of the divergence operator by noting that

$$
\int_{\tau_{i}} \operatorname{div} \mathbf{u} d x=\int_{\partial \tau_{i}} \mathbf{u} \cdot \mathbf{n} d s .
$$

Similarly, for each dual element $\tau_{i}^{\prime}$, we define a discrete flux by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(\mathcal{D}^{\prime} u\right)_{i}:=\sum_{\kappa_{j}^{\prime} \in \partial \tau_{i}^{\prime}} u_{j} \tilde{s}_{j}^{\prime}, \quad \forall u \in \mathbb{R}^{M_{1}} \tag{3.17}
\end{equation*}
$$

where

$$
\tilde{s}_{j}^{\prime}=\left\{\begin{aligned}
\bar{s}_{j}^{\prime} & \text { if } \kappa_{j}^{\prime} \text { is oriented postively along } \partial \tau_{i}^{\prime} \\
-\bar{s}_{j}^{\prime} & \text { if } \kappa_{j}^{\prime} \text { is oriented negatively along } \partial \tau_{i}^{\prime} .
\end{aligned}\right.
$$

We next present a discrete analog of the identity $\operatorname{div}(\operatorname{curl} \mathbf{u})=0$ for the discrete divergence operators $\mathcal{D}$ and $\mathcal{D}^{\prime}$. To do so, we introduce two matrices $B_{1}$ and $B_{1}^{\prime}$. $B_{1}$ is a $F_{1} \times N$ matrix given by

$$
\left(B_{1}\right)_{j i}:=\left\{\begin{aligned}
1 & \text { if } \kappa_{j} \text { is oriented postively along } \partial \tau_{i} \\
-1 & \text { if } \kappa_{j} \text { is oriented negatively along } \partial \tau_{i} \\
0 & \text { if } \kappa_{j} \text { does not meet } \partial \tau_{i}
\end{aligned}\right.
$$

while $B_{1}^{\prime}$ is a $M_{1} \times L$ matrix given by

$$
\left(B_{1}^{\prime}\right)_{j i}:=\left\{\begin{aligned}
1 & \text { if } \kappa_{j}^{\prime} \text { is oriented postively along } \partial \tau_{i}^{\prime} \\
-1 & \text { if } \kappa_{j}^{\prime} \text { is oriented negatively along } \partial \tau_{i}^{\prime} \\
0 & \text { if } \kappa_{j}^{\prime} \text { does not meet } \partial \tau_{i}^{\prime} .
\end{aligned}\right.
$$

Lemma 3.6 We have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{D}=B_{1}^{T} S \quad, \quad \mathcal{D}^{\prime}=\left(B_{1}^{\prime}\right)^{T} S^{\prime} \tag{3.18}
\end{equation*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
B_{1}^{T} C=0 \quad, \quad\left(B_{1}^{\prime}\right)^{T} C^{\prime}=0 \tag{3.19}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. For any $u \in \mathbb{R}^{F_{1}}$, we have

$$
(\mathcal{D} u)_{i}=\sum_{\kappa_{j} \in \partial \tau_{i}} u_{j} \tilde{s_{j}}=\sum_{j=1}^{F_{1}} d_{j} u_{j} s_{j}
$$

where

$$
d_{j}=\left\{\begin{aligned}
1 & \text { if } \kappa_{j} \text { is oriented positively along } \partial \tau_{i} \\
-1 & \text { if } \kappa_{j} \text { is oriented negatively along } \partial \tau_{i} \\
0 & \text { if } \kappa_{j} \text { does not meet } \partial \tau_{i}
\end{aligned}\right.
$$

Clearly, the vector formed by $d_{j}$ 's is the $i$-th column of the matrix $B_{1}$ and hence $\mathcal{D}=B_{1}^{T} S$. The relation $\mathcal{D}^{\prime}=\left(B_{1}^{\prime}\right)^{T} S^{\prime}$ can be proved similarly.

For (3.19), we observe that the $i$-th row of $B_{1}^{T}$ is the direction of $\kappa_{j}$ with respect to $\tau_{i}$. Let $w \in \mathbb{R}^{M}$ with $\left.w\right|_{\partial \Omega}=0$. Then in the $i$-th component of $B_{1}^{T} C w$, each $w_{j}$ which is involved in that component appears exactly twice with two opposite signs, hence $\left(B_{1}^{T} C w\right)_{i}=0$. Similar argument can be applied to show $\left(B_{1}^{\prime}\right)^{T} C^{\prime}=0$.

Here we quote a lemma from Nicolaides and Wu [21]. We know that for any vector field $\mathbf{F}$ with curl $\mathbf{F}=0$, there must exist a scalar potential $p$ such that $\mathbf{F}=\nabla p$. The following lemma shows the discrete analog of this fact, namely, for any vector $v$ with discrete circulation free, there must exist a scalar potential.

Lemma 3.7 We have
(a) Let $v \in \mathbb{R}^{F_{1}}$. Then there exist $\phi \in \mathbb{R}^{N}$ such that $v=B_{1} \phi$ if and only if $G^{T} v=0$.
(b) Let $v \in \mathbb{R}^{M_{1}}$. Then there exist $\phi \in \mathbb{R}^{L}$ such that $v=B_{1}^{\prime} \phi$ if and only if $G v=0$.

Proof. The proof for part (a) can be found in Nicolaides and Wu [21]. Part (b) can be proved in an analogous way.

## Chapter 4

## Spatial Discretization of the Maxwell's Equations

In this chapter we present the spatial discretization of the Maxwell's equations (1.1)-(1.4) by finite volume method. We will give the semi-discrete approximation of (1.1)-(1.2) and show from this semi-discrete scheme that how (1.3) and (1.4) are satisfied in the discrete level. In addition to this consistency property, we will also give the convergence analysis of our finite volume method.

### 4.1 Derivation

First we introduce the following average quantities. Consider the magnetic flux density $\mathbf{B}$. We define its primal face average $B_{f} \in \mathbb{R}^{F_{1}}$ by

$$
\left(B_{f}\right)_{i}:=\frac{1}{s_{i}} \int_{\kappa_{i}} \mathbf{B} \cdot \mathbf{n}_{i} d \sigma
$$

for each primal face $\kappa_{i}$. We define its dual edge average $B_{e}^{\prime} \in \mathbb{R}^{F_{1}}$ by the following fashion. For each non-interface dual edge $\sigma_{i}^{\prime}$, we define

$$
\left(B_{e}^{\prime}\right)_{i}:=\frac{1}{h_{i}^{\prime}} \int_{\sigma_{i}^{\prime}} \mathbf{B} \cdot \mathbf{n}_{i} d l
$$

For each interface dual edge $\sigma_{i}^{\prime}$, we let $\sigma_{i}^{1}=\sigma_{i}^{\prime} \cap \Omega_{1}$ and $\sigma_{i}^{2}=\sigma_{i}^{\prime} \cap \Omega_{2}$ be the portion of $\sigma_{i}^{\prime}$ in $\Omega_{1}$ and $\Omega_{2}$ respectively. Then we define

$$
\left(B_{e}^{\prime}\right)_{i}:=\alpha_{i} \frac{1}{h_{i}^{1}} \int_{\sigma_{i}^{1}} \mathbf{B} \cdot \mathbf{n}_{i} d l+\left(1-\alpha_{i}\right) \frac{1}{h_{i}^{2}} \int_{\sigma_{i}^{2}} \mathbf{B} \cdot \mathbf{n}_{i} d l,
$$

where $\alpha_{i}:=\mu_{1}^{-1} h_{i}^{1}\left(\bar{h}_{i}^{\prime}\right)^{-1}$ and $h_{i}^{r}$ represents the length of $\sigma_{i}^{r}$ for $r=1,2$. Notice that the dual edge average for interface dual edge is defined as the weighted average of the edge averages of the corresponding portions of $\sigma_{i}^{\prime}$ in $\Omega_{1}$ and $\Omega_{2}$. The reason for the choice of the weight $\alpha_{i}$ will be apparent in the derivation of the semi-discrete scheme.

Now, we turn to the electric field $\mathbf{E}$. For each primal edge $\sigma_{i}$, we define the primal edge average $E_{e} \in \mathbb{R}^{M_{1}}$ by

$$
\left(E_{e}\right)_{i}:=\frac{1}{h_{i}} \int_{\sigma_{i}} \mathbf{E} \cdot \mathbf{n}_{i} d l
$$

Similar to the dual edge average for $\mathbf{B}$, we define the dual face average $E_{f}^{\prime} \in \mathbb{R}^{M_{1}}$ of $\mathbf{E}$ by the following fashion. For each non-interface dual face $\kappa_{i}^{\prime}$, we define

$$
\left(E_{f}^{\prime}\right)_{i}:=\frac{1}{s_{i}^{\prime}} \int_{\kappa_{i}^{\prime}} \mathbf{E} \cdot \mathbf{n}_{i} d \sigma .
$$

For each interface dual face, let $\kappa_{i}^{1}=\kappa_{i}^{\prime} \cap \Omega_{1}$ and $\kappa_{i}^{2}=\kappa_{i}^{\prime} \cap \Omega_{2}$ be the portions of $\kappa_{i}^{\prime}$ in $\Omega_{1}$ and $\Omega_{2}$, and $s_{i}^{1}$ and $s_{i}^{2}$ be the area of them respectively. We define

$$
\left(E_{f}^{\prime}\right)_{i}:=\beta_{i} \frac{1}{s_{i}^{1}} \int_{\kappa_{i}^{1}} \mathbf{E} \cdot \mathbf{n}_{i} d \sigma+\left(1-\beta_{i}\right) \frac{1}{s_{i}^{2}} \int_{\kappa_{i}^{2}} \mathbf{E} \cdot \mathbf{n}_{i} d \sigma,
$$

where $\beta_{i}:=\epsilon_{1} s_{i}^{1}\left(\bar{s}_{i}^{\prime}\right)^{-1}$. Clearly, the dual face average of $\mathbf{E}$ for an interface dual face is defined as the weighted average of the face averages of the portions of $\kappa_{i}^{\prime}$ in $\Omega_{1}$ and $\Omega_{2}$. Here, the choice of $\beta_{i}$ will become apparent in the later derivation.

In the finite volume scheme, we approximate the edge averages of $\mathbf{E}$ on each primal edge and the face averages of $\mathbf{B}$ on each primal face. Now, integrating both sides of (1.2) on a primal face $\kappa_{j}$, we have

$$
\frac{d}{d t} \int_{\kappa_{j}} \mathbf{B} \cdot \mathbf{n}_{j} d \sigma+\int_{\kappa_{j}} \operatorname{curl} \mathbf{E} \cdot \mathbf{n}_{j} d \sigma=0 .
$$

By the Stokes' theorem,

$$
\frac{d}{d t} \int_{\kappa_{j}} \mathbf{B} \cdot \mathbf{n}_{j} d \sigma+\sum_{\sigma_{i} \in \partial \kappa_{j}} \int_{\sigma_{i}} \mathbf{E} \cdot \mathbf{t}_{i} d l=0
$$

where the directions $\mathbf{t}_{i}^{\prime} s$ are defined by the right hand rule on the face $\kappa_{j}$. Then

$$
\frac{d}{d t}\left(\left(B_{f}\right)_{j} s_{j}\right)+\sum_{\sigma_{i} \in \partial \kappa_{j}}\left(E_{e}\right)_{i} \tilde{h}_{i}=0
$$

which can be written as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d}{d t}\left(\left(B_{f}\right)_{j} s_{j}\right)+\left(C E_{e}\right)_{\kappa_{j}}=0 \tag{4.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

Integrating both sides of (1.1) on a non-interface dual face $\kappa_{j}^{\prime} \in \Omega_{r}, r=1,2$, we get

$$
\frac{d}{d t} \int_{\kappa_{j}^{\prime}} \epsilon_{r} \mathbf{E} \cdot \mathbf{n}_{j} d \sigma-\sum_{\sigma_{i}^{\prime} \in \partial \kappa_{j}^{\prime}} \int_{\sigma_{i}^{\prime}} \frac{1}{\mu_{i}} \mathbf{B} \cdot \mathbf{t}_{i} d l=\int_{\kappa_{j}^{\prime}} \mathbf{J} \cdot \mathbf{n}_{j} d \sigma,
$$

where the directions $\mathbf{t}_{i}^{\prime} s$ are defined by the right hand rule on the face $\kappa_{j}^{\prime}$. From the definitions of $\tilde{h}_{j}^{\prime}$ and $\bar{s}_{j}^{\prime}$, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d}{d t}\left(\left(E_{f}^{\prime}\right)_{j} \bar{s}_{j}^{\prime}\right)-\left(C^{\prime} B_{e}^{\prime}\right)_{\kappa_{j}^{\prime}}=\int_{\kappa_{j}^{\prime}} \mathbf{J} \cdot \mathbf{n}_{j} d \sigma \tag{4.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

Now, suppose that $\kappa_{j}^{\prime}$ is an interface dual face. Let $\kappa_{j}^{\prime}=\kappa_{j}^{1} \cup \kappa_{j}^{2}$ where $\kappa_{j}^{i}$ is the part of $\kappa_{j}^{\prime}$ that lies in $\Omega_{i}$. (see Figure 1)


Figure 1: An interface dual face $\kappa_{j}^{\prime}$ with normal $n_{j}$

Similarly integrating both sides of (1.1) on $\kappa_{j}^{\prime}$,

$$
\sum_{r=1}^{2} \frac{d}{d t} \int_{\kappa_{j}^{r}} \epsilon_{r} \mathbf{E} \cdot \mathbf{n}_{j} d \sigma-\sum_{r=1}^{2} \int_{\kappa_{j}^{r}} \operatorname{curl} \mathbf{H} \cdot \mathbf{n}_{j} d \sigma=\int_{\kappa_{j}^{\prime}} \mathbf{J} \cdot \mathbf{n}_{j} d \sigma .
$$

Applying Stokes' theorem and the relation $\mathbf{B}=\mu \mathbf{H}$, we have

$$
\begin{align*}
& \frac{d}{d t} \int_{\kappa_{j}^{1}} \epsilon_{1} \mathbf{E} \cdot \mathbf{n}_{j} d \sigma+\frac{d}{d t} \int_{\kappa_{j}^{2}} \epsilon_{2} \mathbf{E} \cdot \mathbf{n}_{j} d \sigma \\
& \quad-\sum_{\sigma_{i}^{\prime} \in \partial \kappa_{j}^{1}} \int_{\sigma_{i}^{\prime}} \frac{1}{\mu_{1}} \mathbf{B} \cdot \mathbf{t}_{i}^{1} d l-\sum_{\sigma_{i}^{\prime} \in \partial \kappa_{j}^{2}} \int_{\sigma_{i}^{\prime}} \frac{1}{\mu_{2}} \mathbf{B} \cdot \mathbf{t}_{i}^{2} d l=\int_{\kappa_{j}^{\prime}} \mathbf{J} \cdot \mathbf{n}_{j} d \sigma \tag{4.3}
\end{align*}
$$

where we remark that there are some edges in $\partial \kappa_{j}^{r}, r=1,2$, that belong to $\Gamma$ and are not edges of our primal and dual meshes, in this case, $\gamma_{1}$ and $\gamma_{2}$ (see Figure 1). Furthermore, the directions $\mathbf{t}_{i}^{1}$ and $\mathbf{t}_{i}^{2}$ are defined by the right hand rule with respect to $\kappa_{j}^{1}$ and $\kappa_{j}^{2}$ respectively. From figure 1, we see that

$$
\begin{aligned}
\sum_{\sigma_{i}^{\prime} \in \partial \kappa_{j}^{1}} \int_{\sigma_{i}^{\prime}} \frac{1}{\mu_{1}} \mathbf{B} \cdot \mathbf{t}_{i}^{1} d l= & \sum_{\sigma_{i}^{\prime} \in \partial \kappa_{j}^{1} \backslash \Gamma} \int_{\sigma_{i}^{\prime}} \frac{1}{\mu_{1}} \mathbf{B} \cdot \mathbf{t}_{i}^{1} d l \\
& +\int_{\gamma_{1}} \frac{1}{\mu_{1}} \mathbf{B}_{1} \cdot \mathbf{t}_{i}^{1} d l+\int_{\gamma_{2}} \frac{1}{\mu_{1}} \mathbf{B}_{1} \cdot \mathbf{t}_{i}^{1} d l
\end{aligned}
$$

and

$$
\begin{aligned}
\sum_{\sigma_{i}^{\prime} \in \partial \kappa_{j}^{2}} \int_{\sigma_{i}^{\prime}} \frac{1}{\mu_{2}} \mathbf{B} \cdot \mathbf{t}_{i}^{2} d l= & \sum_{\sigma_{i}^{\prime} \in \partial \kappa_{j}^{2} \backslash \Gamma} \int_{\sigma_{i}^{\prime}} \frac{1}{\mu_{2}} \mathbf{B} \cdot \mathbf{t}_{i}^{2} d l \\
& +\int_{\gamma_{1}} \frac{1}{\mu_{2}} \mathbf{B}_{2} \cdot \mathbf{t}_{i}^{2} d l+\int_{\gamma_{2}} \frac{1}{\mu_{2}} \mathbf{B}_{2} \cdot \mathbf{t}_{i}^{2} d l
\end{aligned}
$$

where we recall that $\mathbf{B}_{i}=\left.\mathrm{B}\right|_{\Omega_{i}}$ for $i=1,2$. Here, and in the sequel, we will use B without the subscript $i$ if no confusion is caused. Notice that $\mathbf{t}_{i}^{1}$ and $\mathbf{t}_{i}^{2}$ are the same if $\sigma_{i}^{\prime}$ is an interface dual edge. When $\mathbf{t}_{i}^{1}$ and $\mathbf{t}_{i}^{2}$ represent directions on $\gamma_{i}, i=1,2$, they have opposite directions. Assume that the directions of $\gamma_{1}$ and $\gamma_{2}$ are the direction of $\mathbf{t}_{i}^{2}$. Summing up the two equations, the right hand side is given by

$$
\begin{aligned}
\sum_{r=1}^{2} \sum_{\sigma_{i}^{\prime} \in \Omega_{r}} \int_{\sigma_{i}^{\prime}} \frac{1}{\mu_{r}} \mathbf{B} \cdot \mathbf{t}_{i} d l & +\sum_{\sigma_{i}^{\prime} \cap \Gamma \neq \phi}\left(\int_{\sigma_{i}^{\prime} \cap \Omega_{1}} \frac{1}{\mu_{1}} \mathbf{B}_{1} \cdot \mathbf{t}_{i} d l+\int_{\sigma_{i}^{\prime} \cap \Omega_{2}} \frac{1}{\mu_{2}} \mathbf{B}_{2} \cdot \mathbf{t}_{i} d l\right) \\
& +\int_{\gamma_{1}}\left(\mathbf{H}_{2}-\mathbf{H}_{1}\right) \cdot \mathbf{t}_{1} d l+\int_{\gamma_{2}}\left(\mathbf{H}_{2}-\mathbf{H}_{1}\right) \cdot \mathbf{t}_{2} d l
\end{aligned}
$$

where $\mathbf{t}_{1}$ and $\mathbf{t}_{2}$ are the directions of $\gamma_{1}$ and $\gamma_{2}$ respectively. On $\gamma_{1}$, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(\mathbf{H}_{2}-\mathbf{H}_{1}\right) \cdot \mathbf{t}_{1}=\left(\left(\mathbf{H}_{2}-\mathbf{H}_{1}\right) \times \mathbf{m}_{1}\right) \cdot \mathbf{n}_{j}=\mathbf{J}_{\Gamma} \cdot \mathbf{n}_{j} . \tag{4.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

Similarly, on $\gamma_{2}$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(\mathbf{H}_{2}-\mathbf{H}_{1}\right) \cdot \mathbf{t}_{2}=\left(\left(\mathbf{H}_{2}-\mathbf{H}_{1}\right) \times \mathbf{m}_{2}\right) \cdot \mathbf{n}_{j}=\mathbf{J}_{\Gamma} \cdot \mathbf{n}_{j}, \tag{4.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\mathbf{m}_{1}$ and $\mathbf{m}_{2}$ are the unit normal vector on the interface $\Gamma$ at $\gamma_{1}$ and $\gamma_{2}$ respectively. Collecting these results, (4.3) becomes,

$$
\begin{aligned}
\frac{d}{d t} \int_{\kappa_{j}^{\prime}} \epsilon_{1} \mathbf{E} \cdot \mathbf{n}_{j} d \sigma & +\frac{d}{d t} \int_{\kappa_{j}^{2}} \epsilon_{2} \mathbf{E} \cdot \mathbf{n}_{j} d \sigma-\sum_{r=1}^{2} \sum_{\sigma_{i}^{\prime} \in \Omega_{r}} \int_{\sigma_{i}^{\prime}} \frac{1}{\mu_{r}} \mathbf{B} \cdot \mathbf{t}_{i} d l \\
& -\sum_{\sigma_{i}^{\prime} \cap \Gamma \neq \phi}\left(\int_{\sigma_{i}^{1}} \frac{1}{\mu_{1}} \mathbf{B}_{1} \cdot \mathbf{t}_{i} d l+\int_{\sigma_{i}^{2}} \frac{1}{\mu_{2}} \mathbf{B}_{2} \cdot \mathbf{t}_{i} d l\right) \\
& =\int_{\kappa_{j}^{\prime}} \mathbf{J} \cdot \mathbf{n}_{j} d \sigma+\sum_{r=1}^{2} \int_{\gamma_{r}} \mathbf{J}_{\Gamma} \cdot \mathbf{n}_{j} d l .
\end{aligned}
$$

By the definition of face and edge averages for those faces and edges relating the interface, we obtain

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d}{d t}\left(\left(E_{f}^{\prime}\right)_{j} \overline{s_{j}^{\prime}}\right)-\left(C^{\prime} B_{e}^{\prime}\right)_{\kappa_{j}^{\prime}}=\int_{\kappa_{j}^{\prime}} \mathbf{J} \cdot \mathbf{n}_{j} d \sigma .+\sum_{r=1}^{2} \int_{\gamma_{r}} \mathbf{J}_{\Gamma} \cdot \mathbf{n}_{j} d l \tag{4.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

We remark that the other interface dual faces are handled similarly.
Now let $E \in \mathbb{R}^{M_{1}}$ and $B \in \mathbb{R}^{F_{1}}$ be the approximations of the primal edge and face averages of the true solution $\mathbf{E}$ and $\mathbf{B}$ to (1.1)-(1.4) respectively. (4.1) suggests the following approximation

$$
\begin{equation*}
s_{j} \frac{d B_{j}}{d t}+(C E)_{j}=0 . \tag{4.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

We suppose that the values of the dual face average and the corresponding primal edge average are approximately equal as $h$ tends to zero. We also suppose the same result holds for primal faces and dual edges. Then (4.2) suggests the following approximation

$$
\begin{equation*}
\bar{s}_{j}^{\prime} \frac{d E_{j}}{d t}-\left(C^{\prime} B\right)_{j}=\int_{\kappa_{j}^{\prime}} \mathbf{J} \cdot \mathbf{n}_{j} d \sigma . \tag{4.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

For components related to interface dual faces, we suppose that the face averages on $\kappa_{j}^{1}$ and $\kappa_{j}^{2}$ are nearly the same as the corresponding edge average on $\sigma_{j}$. Likewise, the edge averages on $\sigma_{j}^{1}$ and $\sigma_{j}^{2}$ are approximately the same as the face average on $\kappa_{j}$. Now (4.6) suggest the following approximation

$$
\begin{equation*}
\overline{s_{j}^{\prime}} \frac{d E_{j}}{d t}-\left(C^{\prime} B\right)_{j}=\int_{\kappa_{j}^{\prime}} \mathbf{J} \cdot \mathbf{n}_{j} d \sigma+\sum_{r=1}^{2} \int_{\gamma_{r}} \mathbf{J}_{\Gamma} \cdot \mathbf{n}_{j} d l . \tag{4.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

Hence we have the following semi-discrete approximation : Find $E \in \mathbb{R}^{M_{1}}$ and $B \in \mathbb{R}^{F_{1}}$ such that

$$
\begin{align*}
S^{\prime} \frac{d E}{d t}-C^{\prime} B & =\tilde{J}  \tag{4.10}\\
S \frac{d B}{d t}+C E & =0 \tag{4.11}
\end{align*}
$$

where $\tilde{J} \in \mathbb{R}^{M_{1}}$ is defined as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\tilde{J}_{j}:=\int_{\kappa_{j}^{\prime}} \mathbf{J} \cdot \mathbf{n}_{j} d \sigma \tag{4.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

for each non-interface dual face and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\tilde{J}_{j}:=\int_{\kappa_{j}^{\prime}} \mathbf{J} \cdot \mathbf{n}_{j} d \sigma+\sum_{r=1}^{2} \int_{\gamma_{r}} \mathbf{J}_{\Gamma} \cdot \mathbf{n}_{j} d l \tag{4.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

for each interface dual face. We supplement the system (4.10)-(4.11) with the initial condition:

$$
\begin{equation*}
E(0)=E_{e}(0), \quad B(0)=B_{f}(0) \tag{4.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $E_{e}(0)$ and $B_{f}(0)$ are the primal edge average of $\mathbf{E}$ and primal face average of $\mathbf{B}$ at time $t=0$.

Theorem 4.1 The semi-discrete scheme (4.10)-(4.11) has a unique solution.
Proof. The uniqueness follows from the fact that (4.10)-(4.11) is a system of linear ordinary differential equations with constant coefficients.

### 4.2 Consistency theory

In previous section, we have derived a semi-discrete approximation for (1.1)-(1.2). We are now in a position to present the consistency theory for our finite volume method.

Let us consider the continuous Maxwell's equations (1.1)-(1.4). Taking the divergence to both sides of (1.1) and (1.2), we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\frac{\partial}{\partial t} \operatorname{div}(\epsilon \mathbf{E}) & =\operatorname{div} \mathbf{J} \\
\frac{\partial}{\partial t} \operatorname{div}(\mu \mathbf{H}) & =0
\end{aligned}
$$

By the initial condition (1.7) and the continuity equation (1.9), we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\operatorname{div}(\epsilon \mathbf{E}) & =\rho \\
\operatorname{div}(\mu \mathbf{H}) & =0
\end{aligned}
$$

for all $t \in(0, T)$. Hence, any solution (E,B) satisfying (1.1)-(1.2), with the continuity equation being hold for any time and the initial function $\left(\mathbf{E}_{0}, \mathbf{B}_{0}\right)$ satisfies the divergence constraints (1.3)-(1.4), must satisfy the same divergence constraints (1.3)-(1.4).

It is clear that the semi-discrete approximation (4.10)-(4.11) is the discrete analog of the continuous Maxwell's equations (1.1)-(1.2). In order to ensure the finite volume solution to (4.10)-(4.11) represents the solution which also satisfies the divergence constraints, it is required to show that the finite volume solution $(E, B)$ satisfies some discrete analog of the divergence constraints.

The following theorem shows how the finite volume solution $B$ satisfies the divergence constraint in the discrete level.

Theorem 4.2 Suppose $B$ is the solution of the semi-discrete scheme (4.10)(4.11). Then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{D} B=0 \quad \text { for any time } t \geq 0 \tag{4.15}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. We observe that

$$
\begin{aligned}
\frac{d}{d t}(\mathcal{D} B) & =\frac{d}{d t}\left(B_{1}^{T} S B\right) & & \text { by }(3.18) \\
& =-B_{1}^{T} C E & & \text { by }(4.11) \\
& =0 & & \text { by }(3.19)
\end{aligned}
$$

Also, by the initial condition $\operatorname{div}\left(\mu \mathbf{H}_{0}\right)=0$, we obtain for any primal element $\tau_{i}$ the following

$$
\begin{aligned}
\int_{\tau_{i}} \operatorname{div}\left(\mu \mathbf{H}_{0}\right) d x & =0 \\
\sum_{\kappa_{j} \in \partial \tau_{i}} \int_{\kappa_{j}} \mathbf{B}_{0} \cdot \mathbf{n}_{j} d \sigma & =0 \\
\left(\mathcal{D} B_{f}(0)\right)_{i} & =0
\end{aligned}
$$

Note that $B=B_{f}$ at time $t=0$. Hence $\mathcal{D} B=0$ for any time $t \geq 0$.

The next theorem will display how the finite volume solution $E$ satisfies the divergence constraint in the discrete level.

Theorem 4.3 Suppose $E$ is the solution of the semi-discrete scheme (4.10)(4.11). Then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{D}^{\prime} E=\tilde{\rho}+\xi \quad \text { for any time } t \geq 0 \tag{4.16}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\tilde{\rho}$ and $\xi$ are vectors in $\mathbb{R}^{L}$ with

$$
\begin{equation*}
\tilde{\rho}_{j}:=\int_{\tau_{j}^{\prime}} \rho d x+\int_{\tau_{j}^{\prime} \cap \Gamma} \rho_{\Gamma} d \sigma \quad \text { and } \quad \xi:=\mathcal{D}^{\prime}\left(E_{e}-E_{f}^{\prime}\right)(0) \tag{4.17}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. We observe that

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{d}{d t}\left(\mathcal{D}^{\prime} E\right) & =\frac{d}{d t}\left(\left(B_{1}^{\prime}\right)^{T} S^{\prime} E\right) & & \text { by }(3.18)  \tag{3.18}\\
& =\left(B_{1}^{\prime}\right)^{T} C^{\prime} B+\left(B_{1}^{\prime}\right)^{T} \tilde{J}_{1}+\left(B_{1}^{\prime}\right)^{T} \tilde{J}_{2} & & \text { by }(4.10)  \tag{4.10}\\
& =\left(B_{1}^{\prime}\right)^{T} \tilde{J}_{1}+\left(B_{1}^{\prime}\right)^{T} \tilde{J}_{2} & & \text { by }(3.19), \tag{3.19}
\end{align*}
$$

where

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \left(\tilde{J}_{1}\right)_{i}:=\int_{\kappa_{i}^{\prime}} \mathbf{J} \cdot \mathbf{n}_{i} d \sigma \\
& \left(\tilde{J}_{2}\right)_{i}:=\sum_{r=1}^{2} \int_{\gamma_{r}} \mathbf{J}_{\Gamma} \cdot \mathbf{n}_{i} d l .
\end{aligned}
$$

We remark here that $\left(\tilde{J}_{2}\right)_{i}=0$ for each non-interface dual face $\kappa_{i}^{\prime}$. Also, $\left(\left(B_{1}^{\prime}\right)^{T} \tilde{J}_{2}\right)_{j}=$ 0 for any non-interface dual element $\tau_{j}^{\prime}$. Integrating both sides of the continuity equation (1.9) on a non-interface dual element $\tau_{j}^{\prime}$, we obtain

$$
\begin{aligned}
\int_{\tau_{j}^{\prime}} \frac{\partial \rho}{\partial t} d x & =\int_{\tau_{j}^{\prime}} \operatorname{div} \mathbf{J} d x \\
& =\sum_{\kappa_{i}^{\prime} \in \partial \tau_{j}^{\prime}} \int_{\kappa_{i}^{\prime}} \mathbf{J} \cdot \mathbf{n}_{i} d \sigma,
\end{aligned}
$$

where $\mathbf{n}_{i}$ is the unit outward normal vector of $\tau_{j}^{\prime}$ on the boundary face $\kappa_{i}^{\prime}$. By the definition of the matrix $B_{1}^{\prime}$, we have

$$
\frac{d}{d t} \int_{\tau_{j}^{\prime}} \rho d x=\left(\left(B_{1}^{\prime}\right)^{T} \tilde{J}_{1}\right)_{j} .
$$

So, for each non-interface dual element $\tau_{j}^{\prime}$, we obtain

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d}{d t}\left(\mathcal{D}^{\prime} E\right)_{j}=\frac{d}{d t} \int_{\tau_{j}^{\prime}} \rho d x \tag{4.18}
\end{equation*}
$$

Similarly, integrating both sides of the continuity equation (1.9) on an interface dual element $\tau_{j}^{\prime}$, we get

$$
\int_{\tau_{j}^{\prime}} \frac{\partial \rho}{\partial t} d x=\sum_{\kappa_{i}^{\prime} \in \partial \tau_{j}^{\prime}} \int_{\kappa_{i}^{\prime}} \mathbf{J} \cdot \mathbf{n}_{i} d \sigma-\int_{\tau_{j}^{\prime} \cap \Gamma}[\mathbf{J} \cdot \mathbf{m}] d \sigma .
$$

From (1.1), we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\frac{d}{d t} \int_{\tau_{j}^{\prime} \cap \Gamma}[\epsilon \mathbf{E} \cdot \mathbf{m}] d \sigma-\int_{\tau_{j}^{\prime} \cap \Gamma}[\operatorname{curl} \mathbf{H} \cdot \mathbf{m}] d \sigma & =\int_{\tau_{j}^{\prime} \cap \Gamma}[\mathbf{J} \cdot \mathbf{m}] d \sigma, \\
\frac{d}{d t} \int_{\tau_{j}^{\prime} \cap \Gamma} \rho_{\Gamma} d \sigma-\int_{\tau_{j}^{\prime} \cap \Gamma}[\operatorname{curl} \mathbf{H} \cdot \mathbf{m}] d \sigma & =\int_{\tau_{j}^{\prime} \cap \Gamma}[\mathbf{J} \cdot \mathbf{m}] d \sigma .
\end{aligned}
$$

By the equations (4.4) and (4.5),

$$
\int_{\tau_{j}^{\prime} \cap \Gamma}[\operatorname{curl} \mathbf{H} \cdot \mathbf{m}] d \sigma=\sum_{\gamma_{r}^{\prime} \in \partial\left(\tau_{j}^{\prime} \cap \Gamma\right)} \int_{\gamma_{r}^{\prime}}\left[\mathbf{H} \cdot \mathbf{t}_{r}\right] d l=\sum_{\gamma_{r}^{\prime} \in \partial\left(\tau_{j}^{\prime} \cap \Gamma\right)} \int_{\gamma_{r}^{\prime}} \mathbf{J}_{\Gamma} \cdot \mathbf{n}_{r} d l .
$$

By the definition of the matrix $B_{1}^{\prime}$, we note that

$$
\sum_{\gamma_{r}^{\prime} \in \partial\left(\tau_{j}^{\prime} \cap \Gamma\right)} \int_{\gamma_{r}^{\prime}} \mathbf{J}_{\Gamma} \cdot \mathbf{n}_{r} d l=\left(\left(B_{1}^{\prime}\right)^{T} \tilde{J}_{2}\right)_{j} .
$$

Hence, for each interface dual element $\tau_{j}^{\prime}$, we obtain

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d}{d t}\left(\mathcal{D}^{\prime} E\right)_{j}=\frac{d}{d t} \int_{\tau_{j}^{\prime}} \rho d x+\frac{d}{d t} \int_{\tau_{j}^{\prime} \cap \Gamma} \rho_{\Gamma} d \sigma . \tag{4.19}
\end{equation*}
$$

Also, by the initial condition $\operatorname{div}\left(\epsilon \mathbf{E}_{0}\right)=\rho(0)$, we obtain for any dual element $\tau_{j}^{\prime}$ the following

$$
\begin{aligned}
\int_{\tau_{j}^{\prime}} \operatorname{div}\left(\epsilon \mathbf{E}_{0}\right) d x & =\int_{\tau_{j}^{\prime}} \rho(0) d x \\
\sum_{\kappa_{i}^{\prime} \in \partial \tau_{j}^{\prime}} \int_{\kappa_{i}^{\prime}} \epsilon \mathbf{E}_{0} \cdot \mathbf{n}_{i} d \sigma & =\int_{\tau_{j}^{\prime}} \rho(0) d x+\int_{\tau_{j}^{\prime} \cap \Gamma} \rho_{\Gamma}(0) d \sigma \\
\left(\mathcal{D}^{\prime} E_{f}^{\prime}(0)\right)_{j} & =\tilde{\rho}_{j}(0) .
\end{aligned}
$$

Integrating both sides of (4.18) and (4.19) on $[0, t]$,

$$
\mathcal{D}^{\prime} E(t)=\mathcal{D}^{\prime} E(0)+\tilde{\rho}(t)-\tilde{\rho}(0)
$$

and finally the following

$$
\mathcal{D}^{\prime} E(t)=\tilde{\rho}(t)+\mathcal{D}^{\prime}\left(E_{e}-E_{f}^{\prime}\right)(0)
$$

since $E=E_{e}$ at time $t=0$.

### 4.3 Convergence theory

We devote this section to the convergence analysis of our semi-discrete finite volume method. We further divide this section into two parts. In the first part, we give a proof of the semi-discrete approximation for the case when both $\Omega$ and $\Omega_{1}$ are polyhedral domains. We have shown that the approximation is first order convergent. In the second part, we consider a special case when both $\Omega$ and $\Omega_{1}$ are rectangular domains. In this case, we can prove that the approximation is actually second order convergent.

### 4.3.1 Polyhedral domain

Before we go on with the convergence analysis on our finite volume method, we need the following technical lemma which is essential in the later analysis. In fact, it is the Bramble-Hilbert lemma we cited in Chapter 2. However, we have a sharper estimate on the constant $K(\Omega)$.

Lemma 4.1 Let $\tau_{i}$ be a tetrahedral primal element. Suppose that $f$ is a bounded linear functional on the space $W^{1, p}\left(\tau_{i}\right)$ such that $f(c)=0$ for any constant function $c \in \mathbb{R}^{1}$. Then for any $v \in W^{1, p}\left(\tau_{i}\right)$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
|f(v)| \leq K h^{1-\frac{3}{p}}|v|_{W^{1, p}\left(\tau_{i}\right)} \tag{4.20}
\end{equation*}
$$

holds for some generic constant $K$.

Proof. We prove this lemma by first considering the standard tetrahedral element $\hat{\tau}_{i}$ with vertices $(0,0,0),(1,0,0),(0,1,0)$ and $(0,0,1)$. Clearly, there is an affine transformation $\hat{T}$ that maps $\tau_{i}$ onto $\hat{\tau}_{i}$. We denote by $\hat{v}$ the transformed function. Then, by the Bramble-Hilbert lemma, there is a constant $K$ independent of $\tau_{i}$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
|f(\hat{v})| \leq K|\hat{v}|_{W^{1, p}\left(\hat{\tau}_{i}\right)} . \tag{4.21}
\end{equation*}
$$

Define a $3 \times 3$ matrix $A$ as follows:

$$
A:=\left(\begin{array}{lll}
h & 0 & 0 \\
0 & h & 0 \\
0 & 0 & h
\end{array}\right) .
$$

Then $A$ defines an affine transformation that maps $\hat{\tau}_{i}$ onto a tetrahedral element $\tilde{\tau}_{i}$ with vertices $(0,0,0),(h, 0,0),(0, h, 0)$ and $(0,0, h)$. Let $\tilde{v}$ be the corresponding transformed function. Also, we denote the coordinate systems in $\hat{\tau}_{i}$ and $\tilde{\tau}_{i}$ as $(\hat{x}, \hat{y}, \hat{z})$ and $(\tilde{x}, \tilde{y}, \tilde{z})$ respectively. Then, by the chain rule, we have

$$
\frac{\partial \hat{v}}{\partial \hat{x}}=\frac{\partial \hat{v}}{\partial \tilde{x}} \frac{\partial \tilde{x}}{\partial \hat{x}}+\frac{\partial \hat{v}}{\partial \tilde{y}} \frac{\partial \tilde{x}}{\partial \hat{y}}+\frac{\partial \hat{v}}{\partial \tilde{z}} \frac{\partial \tilde{x}}{\partial \hat{z}}=h \frac{\partial \tilde{v}}{\partial \tilde{x}} .
$$

Similarly, we have

$$
\frac{\partial \hat{v}}{\partial \hat{y}}=h \frac{\partial \tilde{v}}{\partial \tilde{y}}, \quad \frac{\partial \hat{v}}{\partial \hat{z}}=h \frac{\partial \tilde{v}}{\partial \tilde{z}} .
$$

Therefore,

$$
\begin{aligned}
|\hat{v}|_{W^{1, p}\left(\tilde{\tau}_{i}\right)}^{p} & =\int_{\hat{\tau}_{i}}\left|\frac{\partial \hat{v}}{\partial \hat{x}}\right|^{p}+\left|\frac{\partial \hat{v}}{\partial \hat{y}}\right|^{p}+\left|\frac{\partial \hat{v}}{\partial \hat{z}}\right|^{p} d \hat{x} d \hat{y} d \hat{z}, \\
& =h^{p} \int_{\tilde{\tau}_{i}}\left(\left|\frac{\partial \tilde{v}}{\partial \tilde{x}}\right|^{p}+\left|\frac{\partial \tilde{v}}{\partial \tilde{y}}\right|^{p}+\left|\frac{\partial \tilde{v}}{\partial \tilde{z}}\right|^{p}\right)|A|^{-1} d \tilde{x} d \tilde{y} d \tilde{z}, \\
& =h^{p-3}|\tilde{v}|_{W^{1, p}\left(\tilde{\tau}_{i}\right)}^{p} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Then, (4.21) becomes

$$
\begin{equation*}
|f(\tilde{v})| \leq K h^{1-\frac{3}{p}}|\tilde{v}|_{W^{1, p}\left(\tilde{\tau}_{i}\right)} . \tag{4.22}
\end{equation*}
$$

Now, we can find an affine transformation $\hat{Q}: \tilde{\tau}_{i} \rightarrow \tau_{i}$ independent of $h$ such that $\hat{Q} A \hat{T}=I$, which is the identity transformation. By applying $\hat{Q}$ to (4.22) and the chain rule to the right hand side of (4.22), we have

$$
|f(v)| \leq K h^{1-\frac{3}{p}}|v|_{W^{1, p}\left(\tau_{i}\right)}
$$

We now proceed to develop the convergence theory for the semi-discrete approximation. To do so, substracting (4.7) from (4.1), we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
S \frac{d}{d t}\left(B-B_{f}\right)+C\left(E-E_{e}\right)=0 . \tag{4.23}
\end{equation*}
$$

Similarly, subtracting (4.8) from (4.2) and (4.9) from (4.6) we obtain

$$
\begin{equation*}
S^{\prime} \frac{d}{d t}\left(E-E_{f}^{\prime}\right)-C^{\prime}\left(B-B_{e}^{\prime}\right)=0 \tag{4.24}
\end{equation*}
$$

By the boundary condition $\mathbf{E} \times \mathbf{n}=0$ on $\partial \Omega$, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left.\left(E-E_{e}\right)\right|_{\partial \Omega}=0 \tag{4.25}
\end{equation*}
$$

Now, multiplying (4.23) by $D^{\prime}\left(B-B_{e}^{\prime}\right)$ and (4.24) by $D\left(E-E_{e}\right)$, then adding the two equations together, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \left(S\left(\dot{B}-\dot{B}_{f}\right), D^{\prime}\left(B-B_{e}\right)\right)+\left(S^{\prime}\left(\dot{E}-\dot{E}_{f}^{\prime}\right), D\left(E-E_{e}\right)\right) \\
& =\left(C^{\prime}\left(B-B_{e}^{\prime}\right), D\left(E-E_{e}\right)\right)-\left(C\left(E-E_{e}\right), D^{\prime}\left(B-B_{e}^{\prime}\right)\right),
\end{aligned}
$$

where the dot represents derivative in time. By (4.25) and lemma 3.2,

$$
\left(C^{\prime}\left(B-B_{e}^{\prime}\right), D\left(E-E_{e}\right)\right)-\left(C\left(E-E_{e}\right), D^{\prime}\left(B-B_{e}^{\prime}\right)\right)=0
$$

and consequently

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(\dot{B}-\dot{B}_{f}, B-B_{e}^{\prime}\right)_{W}+\left(\dot{E}-\dot{E}_{f}^{\prime}, E-E_{e}\right)_{W^{\prime}}=0 \tag{4.26}
\end{equation*}
$$

Now, we rewrite (4.26) as

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \left(\dot{B}-\dot{B}_{e}^{\prime}, B-B_{e}^{\prime}\right)_{W}+\left(\dot{E}-\dot{E}_{e}, E-E_{e}\right)_{W^{\prime}} \\
& =\left(\dot{E}_{f}^{\prime}-\dot{E}_{e}, E-E_{e}\right)_{W^{\prime}}+\left(\dot{B}_{f}-\dot{B}_{e}^{\prime}, B-B_{e}^{\prime}\right)_{W}
\end{aligned}
$$

Applying integration by parts with respect to time in the above equation, we obtain

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{1}{2} \frac{d}{d t}\left(\left\|B-B_{e}^{\prime}\right\|_{W}^{2}\right. & \left.+\left\|E-E_{e}\right\|_{W^{\prime}}^{2}\right)  \tag{4.27}\\
& =\left(\dot{E}_{f}^{\prime}-\dot{E}_{e}, E-E_{e}\right)_{W^{\prime}}+\left(\dot{B}_{f}-\dot{B}_{e}^{\prime}, B-B_{e}^{\prime}\right)_{W}
\end{align*}
$$

The following theorem is devoted to show that our semi-discrete finite volume approximation of the Maxwell's equations is first order convergent.

Theorem 4.4 Assume that $(\mathbf{E}, \mathbf{B}) \in\left(W^{1,1}\left(0, T ; W^{1, p}\left(\Omega_{i}\right)\right)^{3}\right)^{2}$, for $i=1,2$, satisfies (1.1)-(1.4) and $p>2$. Let ( $E, B$ ) be the solution of (4.10)-(4.11) on nonuniform grids with maximum grid size $h$. Then

$$
\begin{align*}
\max _{0 \leq t \leq T} & \left(\left\|\left(E-E_{e}\right)(t)\right\|_{W^{\prime}}+\left\|\left(B-B_{f}\right)(t)\right\|_{W}\right) \\
& \leq K h \sum_{i=1}^{2}\left(\|\mathbf{E}\|_{W^{1,1}\left(0, T ; W^{1, p}\left(\Omega_{i}\right)\right)^{3}}+\|\mathbf{B}\|_{W^{1,1}\left(0, T ; W^{1, p}\left(\Omega_{i}\right)\right)^{3}}\right) \tag{4.28}
\end{align*}
$$

Proof. We prove this theorem by using (4.27). For each non-interface interior primal edge $\sigma_{i}$, we have

$$
\left(\dot{E}_{f}^{\prime}-\dot{E}_{e}\right)_{i}=\frac{1}{s_{i}^{\prime}} \int_{\kappa_{i}^{\prime}} \dot{\mathbf{E}} \cdot \mathbf{n}_{i} d \sigma-\frac{1}{h_{i}} \int_{\sigma_{i}} \dot{\mathbf{E}} \cdot \mathbf{n}_{i} d l
$$

where $\mathbf{n}_{i}$ is the unit normal vector to the dual face $\kappa_{i}^{\prime}$. According to Sobolev embedding theorem, for $p>2$, we have

$$
W^{1, p}\left(\tau_{j}^{\prime} \cup \tau_{l}^{\prime}\right) \hookrightarrow L^{1}\left(\kappa_{i}^{\prime}\right), \quad W^{1, p}\left(\tau_{j}^{\prime} \cup \tau_{l}^{\prime}\right) \hookrightarrow L^{1}\left(\sigma_{i}\right)
$$

where $\tau_{j}^{\prime}$ and $\tau_{l}^{\prime}$ are two dual element sharing the same dual face $\kappa_{i}^{\prime}$. Hence, $\left(\dot{E}_{f}^{\prime}-\dot{E}_{e}\right)_{i}$ is a bounded linear functional on $W^{1, p}\left(\tau_{j}^{\prime} \cup \tau_{l}^{\prime}\right)^{3}$ and vanishes for any constant functions. By Lemma 4.1,

$$
\left|\left(\dot{E}_{f}^{\prime}-\dot{E}_{e}\right)_{i}\right| \leq K h^{1-\frac{3}{p}}|\dot{\mathbf{E}}|_{W^{1, p}\left(\tau_{j}^{\prime} \cup \tau_{i}^{\prime}\right)^{3}}
$$

for some generic constant $K$.
Now, for each interface primal edge $\sigma_{i}$, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left(\dot{E}_{f}^{\prime}-\dot{E}_{e}\right)_{i} & =\left(\left(\beta \dot{E}_{f_{1}}+(1-\beta) \dot{E}_{f_{2}}\right)-\dot{E}_{e}\right)_{i} \\
& =\beta\left(\dot{E}_{f_{1}}-\dot{E}_{e}\right)_{i}+(1-\beta)\left(\dot{E}_{f_{2}}-\dot{E}_{e}\right)_{i}
\end{aligned}
$$

Notice that $\left(\dot{E}_{f_{1}}-\dot{E}_{e}\right)_{i}$ and $\left(\dot{E}_{f_{2}}-\dot{E}_{e}\right)_{i}$ are bounded linear functional on $W^{1, p}\left(\left(\tau_{j}^{\prime} \cup\right.\right.$ $\left.\left.\tau_{l}^{\prime}\right) \cap \Omega_{1}\right)^{3}$ and $W^{1, p}\left(\left(\tau_{j}^{\prime} \cup \tau_{l}^{\prime}\right) \cap \Omega_{2}\right)^{3}$ respectively and both of them vanish for any constant functions. Lemma 4.1 then yields

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \left|\left(\dot{E}_{f_{1}}-\dot{E}_{e}\right)_{i}\right| \leq K h^{1-\frac{3}{p}}|\dot{\mathbf{E}}|_{W^{1, p}\left(\left(\tau_{j}^{\prime} \cup \tau_{i}^{\prime}\right) \cap \Omega_{1}\right)^{3}}, \\
& \left|\left(\dot{E}_{f_{2}}-\dot{E}_{e}\right)_{i}\right| \leq K h^{1-\frac{3}{p}}|\dot{\mathbf{E}}|_{W^{1, p}\left(\left(\tau_{j}^{\prime} \cup \tau_{i}^{\prime}\right) \cap \Omega_{2}\right)^{3}} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Hence,

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left\|\dot{E}_{f}^{\prime}-\dot{E}_{e}\right\|_{W^{\prime}}^{2} & =\sum_{i=1}^{M_{1}} \bar{s}_{i} h_{i}\left|\left(\dot{E}_{f}^{\prime}-\dot{E}_{e}\right)_{i}\right|^{2}, \\
& =\sum_{\sigma_{i} \cap \Gamma=\phi} \bar{s}_{i} h_{i}\left|\left(\dot{E}_{f}^{\prime}-\dot{E}_{e}\right)_{i}\right|^{2}+\sum_{\sigma_{i} \cap \Gamma \neq \phi} \bar{s}_{i} h_{i}\left|\left(\dot{E}_{f}^{\prime}-\dot{E}_{e}\right)_{i}\right|^{2}, \\
& \leq K h^{5-\frac{6}{p}} \sum_{i=1}^{M_{1}}\left(|\dot{\mathbf{E}}|_{W^{1, p}\left(\left(\tau_{j}^{\prime} \cup \tau_{l}^{\prime}\right) \cap \Omega_{1}\right)^{3}}^{2}+|\dot{\mathbf{E}}|_{W^{1, p}\left(\left(\tau_{j}^{\prime} \cup \tau_{i}^{\prime}\right) \cap \Omega_{2}\right)^{3}}^{2}\right) \\
& \leq K h^{5-\frac{6}{p}} \sum_{r=1}^{2}\left(\sum_{i=1}^{M_{1}}|\dot{\mathbf{E}}|_{W^{1, p}\left(\left(\tau_{j}^{\prime} \cup \tau_{l}^{\prime}\right) \cap \Omega_{1}\right)^{3}}^{p}+|\dot{\mathbf{E}}|_{W^{1, p}\left(\left(\tau_{j}^{\prime} \cup \tau_{i}^{\prime}\right) \cap \Omega_{2}\right)^{3}}^{p}{ }^{\frac{2}{p}}\left(\sum_{i=1}^{M_{1}} 1\right)^{1-\frac{2}{p}} .\right.
\end{aligned}
$$

By the fact that

$$
h^{3} \sum_{i=1}^{M_{1}} 1 \leq K
$$

we conclude that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|\dot{E}_{f}^{\prime}-\dot{E}_{e}\right\|_{W^{\prime}} \leq K h \sum_{r=1}^{2}|\dot{\mathbf{E}}|_{W^{1, p}\left(\Omega_{r}\right)^{3}} \tag{4.29}
\end{equation*}
$$

Similarly, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|\dot{B}_{f}-\dot{B}_{e}^{\prime}\right\|_{W} \leq K h \sum_{r=1}^{2}|\dot{\mathbf{B}}|_{W^{1, p}\left(\Omega_{r}\right)^{3}} \tag{4.30}
\end{equation*}
$$

Integrating both sides of (4.27) on the interval $(0, t)$ and by the CauchySchwarz inequality, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \left\|\left(B-B_{e}^{\prime}\right)(t)\right\|_{W}^{2}+\left\|\left(E-E_{e}\right)(t)\right\|_{W^{\prime}}^{2} \\
& \begin{aligned}
& \leq 2 \int_{0}^{t}\left(\left\|\left(B-B_{e}^{\prime}\right)(s)\right\|_{W}\left\|\left(\dot{B}_{f}-\dot{B}_{e}^{\prime}\right)(s)\right\|_{W}\right. \\
& \quad\left.+\left\|\left(E-E_{e}\right)(s)\right\|_{W^{\prime}}\left\|\left(\dot{E}_{f}^{\prime}-\dot{E}_{e}\right)(s)\right\|_{W^{\prime}}\right) d s \\
& \leq 2 \max _{0 \leq t \leq T}\left(\left\|\left(B-B_{e}^{\prime}\right)(t)\right\|_{W}+\left\|\left(E-E_{e}\right)(t)\right\|_{W^{\prime}}\right) \\
& \quad \times \int_{0}^{T}\left\|\left(\dot{B}_{f}-\dot{B}_{e}^{\prime}\right)(s)\right\|_{W}+\left\|\left(\dot{E}_{f}^{\prime}-\dot{E}_{e}\right)(s)\right\|_{W^{\prime}} d s .
\end{aligned}
\end{aligned}
$$

Then by (4.29) and (4.30), we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \max _{0 \leq t \leq T}\left(\left\|\left(E-E_{e}\right)(t)\right\|_{W^{\prime}}+\left\|\left(B-B_{e}^{\prime}\right)(t)\right\|_{W}\right) \\
& \quad \leq K h \sum_{i=1}^{2}\left(|\mathbf{E}|_{W^{1,1}\left(0, T ; W^{1, p}\left(\Omega_{i}\right)\right)^{3}}+|\mathbf{B}|_{W^{1,1}\left(0, T ; W^{1, p}\left(\Omega_{i}\right)\right)^{3}}\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

In order to complete the proof, we first observe that

$$
\left\|\left(B-B_{f}\right)(t)\right\|_{W} \leq\left\|\left(B-B_{e}^{\prime}\right)(t)\right\|_{W}+\left\|\left(B_{e}^{\prime}-B_{f}\right)(t)\right\|_{W} .
$$

So, it remains to estimate $\left\|\left(B_{e}^{\prime}-B_{f}\right)(t)\right\|_{W}$. From (4.30), we know that

$$
\left\|B_{f}-B_{e}^{\prime}\right\|_{W} \leq K h \sum_{r=1}^{2}|\mathbf{B}|_{W^{1, p}\left(\Omega_{r}\right)^{3}} .
$$

Hence,

$$
\begin{aligned}
\max _{0 \leq t \leq T}\left\|\left(B_{f}-B_{e}^{\prime}\right)(t)\right\|_{W} & \leq K h \sum_{r=1}^{2} \max _{0 \leq t \leq T}|\mathbf{B}(t)|_{W^{1, p}\left(\Omega_{r}\right)^{3}} \\
& \leq K h \sum_{r=1}^{2}\|\mathbf{B}\|_{W^{1,1}\left(0, T ; W^{1, p}\left(\Omega_{i}\right)\right)^{3}}
\end{aligned}
$$

where the last step follows from Sobolev embedding theorem.

### 4.3.2 Rectangular domain

We now give the convergence analysis on our semi-discrete finite volume approximation of the Maxwell's equations when both $\Omega$ and $\Omega_{1}$ are rectangular domains. It is clear that all the derivations we developed for the finite volume scheme with the polydedral domain can be carried over to the rectangular domain case.

First, we need the following technical lemma which is a sharp estimate of the Bramble-Hilbert lemma.

Lemma 4.2 Let $\tau_{i}$ be a cubic primal element. Suppose that $f$ is a bounded linear functional on the space $W^{2, p}\left(\tau_{i}\right)$ such that $f(c)=0$ for any linear function $c \in P_{1}\left(\tau_{i}\right)$. Then for any $v \in W^{2, p}\left(\tau_{i}\right)$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
|f(v)| \leq K h^{2-\frac{3}{p}}|v|_{W^{2, p}\left(\tau_{i}\right)} \tag{4.31}
\end{equation*}
$$

holds for some generic constant $K$. Moreover, if $f$ vanishes at all quadratic functions, then

$$
\begin{equation*}
|f(v)| \leq K h^{3-\frac{3}{p}}|v|_{W^{3, p}\left(\tau_{i}\right)} . \tag{4.32}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. We prove this lemma by first considering the standard cubic element $\hat{\tau}_{i}=[0,1]^{3}$. Clearly, there is an affine transformation $\hat{T}$ that maps $\tau_{i}$ onto $\hat{\tau}_{i}$. We let $\hat{v}$ be the transformed function. Then, by the Bramble-Hilbert lemma, there is a constant $K$ independent of $\tau_{i}$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
|f(\hat{v})| \leq K|\hat{v}|_{W^{2, p}\left(\hat{\tau}_{i}\right)} . \tag{4.33}
\end{equation*}
$$

Define a $3 \times 3$ matrix $A$ as follows:

$$
A:=\left(\begin{array}{lll}
h & 0 & 0 \\
0 & h & 0 \\
0 & 0 & h
\end{array}\right) .
$$

Then $A$ defines an affine transformation that maps $\hat{\tau}_{i}$ onto a cubic element $\tilde{\tau}_{i}=$ $[0, h]^{3}$. Let $\tilde{v}$ be the corresponding transformed function. Also, we denote the coordinate systems in $\hat{\tau}_{i}$ and $\tilde{\tau}_{i}$ as $(\hat{x}, \hat{y}, \hat{z})$ and $(\tilde{x}, \tilde{y}, \tilde{z})$ respectively. Then, by the chain rule, we have

$$
\frac{\partial \hat{v}}{\partial \hat{x}}=\frac{\partial \hat{v}}{\partial \tilde{x}} \frac{\partial \tilde{x}}{\partial \hat{x}}+\frac{\partial \hat{v}}{\partial \tilde{y}} \frac{\partial \tilde{x}}{\partial \hat{y}}+\frac{\partial \hat{v}}{\partial \tilde{z}} \frac{\partial \tilde{x}}{\partial \hat{z}}=h \frac{\partial \tilde{v}}{\partial \tilde{x}} .
$$

Applying the chain rule again, we have

$$
\frac{\partial^{2} \hat{v}}{\partial \hat{x}^{2}}=h^{2} \frac{\partial^{2} \tilde{v}}{\partial \tilde{x}^{2}}
$$

Similarly, we have

$$
\frac{\partial^{2} \hat{v}}{\partial \hat{y}^{2}}=h^{2} \frac{\partial^{2} \tilde{v}}{\partial \tilde{y}^{2}}, \quad \frac{\partial^{2} \hat{v}}{\partial \hat{z}^{2}}=h^{2} \frac{\partial^{2} \tilde{v}}{\partial \tilde{z}^{2}} .
$$

Therefore,

$$
\begin{aligned}
|\hat{v}|_{W^{2, p}\left(\hat{\tau}_{i}\right)}^{p} & =\int_{\hat{\tau}_{i}}\left|\frac{\partial^{2} \hat{v}}{\partial \hat{x}^{2}}\right|^{p}+\left|\frac{\partial^{2} \hat{v}}{\partial \hat{y}^{2}}\right|^{p}+\left|\frac{\partial^{2} \hat{v}}{\partial \hat{z}^{2}}\right|^{p} d \hat{x} d \hat{y} d \hat{z}, \\
& =h^{2 p} \int_{\tilde{\tau}_{i}}\left(\left|\frac{\partial^{2} \tilde{v}}{\partial \tilde{x}^{2}}\right|^{p}+\left|\frac{\partial^{2} \tilde{v}}{\partial \tilde{y}^{2}}\right|^{p}+\left|\frac{\partial^{2} \tilde{v}}{\partial \tilde{z}^{2}}\right|^{p}\right)|A|^{-1} d \tilde{x} d \tilde{y} d \tilde{z}, \\
& =h^{2 p-3}|\tilde{v}|_{W^{2, p}\left(\tilde{\tau}_{i}\right)}^{p} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Then, (4.33) becomes

$$
\begin{equation*}
|f(\tilde{v})| \leq K h^{2-\frac{3}{p}}|\tilde{v}|_{W^{1, p}\left(\tilde{\tau}_{i}\right)} . \tag{4.34}
\end{equation*}
$$

Now, we can find an affine transformation $\hat{Q}: \tilde{\tau}_{i} \rightarrow \tau_{i}$ independent of $h$ such that $\hat{Q} A \hat{T}=I$, which is the identity transformation. By applying $\hat{Q}$ to (4.34) and the chain rule to the right hand side of (4.34), we have

$$
|f(v)| \leq K h^{2-\frac{3}{p}}|v|_{W^{2, p}\left(\tau_{i}\right)} .
$$

(4.32) can be proved in a similar way.

We are now in a position to establish our convergence theory. Differentiating both sides of (4.10) with respect to $t$, we get

$$
S^{\prime} \frac{d^{2} E}{d t^{2}}-C^{\prime} \frac{d B}{d t}=\frac{d \tilde{J}}{d t}
$$

and by (4.11),

$$
\begin{equation*}
S^{\prime} \frac{d^{2} E}{d t^{2}}+C^{\prime} S^{-1} C E=\frac{d \tilde{J}}{d t} \tag{4,35}
\end{equation*}
$$

Rewrite (4.35) into the following form

$$
S^{\prime} \frac{d^{2}}{d t^{2}}\left(E-E_{e}\right)+C^{\prime} S^{-1} C\left(E-E_{e}\right)=\frac{d \tilde{J}}{d t}-S^{\prime} \frac{d^{2} E_{e}}{d t^{2}}-C^{\prime} S^{-1} C E_{e}
$$

and by (4.1), we then derive

$$
\begin{equation*}
S^{\prime} \frac{d^{2}}{d t^{2}}\left(E-E_{e}\right)+C^{\prime} S^{-1} C\left(E-E_{e}\right)=\frac{d}{d t}\left(\tilde{J}-S^{\prime} \frac{d E_{e}}{d t}+C^{\prime} B_{f}\right) \tag{4.36}
\end{equation*}
$$

Namely, $E-E_{e}$ satisfies the second order ordinary differential equation (4.36) with the following initial condition

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(E-E_{e}\right)(0)=0 \tag{4.37}
\end{equation*}
$$

Multiplying both sides of (4.36) by $D\left(\dot{E}-\dot{E}_{e}\right)$, we obtain

$$
\left(S^{\prime}\left(\ddot{E}-\ddot{E}_{e}\right), D\left(\dot{E}-\dot{E}_{e}\right)\right)+\left(C^{\prime} S^{-1} C\left(E-E_{e}\right), D\left(\dot{E}-\dot{E}_{e}\right)\right)=\left(\frac{d f}{d t}, D\left(\dot{E}-\dot{E}_{e}\right)\right)
$$

where

$$
f:=\tilde{J}-S^{\prime} \frac{d E_{e}}{d t}+C^{\prime} B_{f} .
$$

By (3.13),

$$
\left(S^{\prime}\left(\ddot{E}-\ddot{E}_{e}\right), D\left(\dot{E}-\dot{E}_{e}\right)\right)+\left(D^{\prime} S^{-1} C\left(E-E_{e}\right), C\left(\dot{E}-\dot{E}_{e}\right)\right)=\left(\frac{d f}{d t}, D\left(\dot{E}-\dot{E}_{e}\right)\right)
$$

By Integration by parts with respect to $t$, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{1}{2} \frac{d}{d t}\left\|\dot{E}-\dot{E}_{e}\right\|_{W^{\prime}}^{2}+\frac{1}{2} \frac{d}{d t}\left\|E-E_{e}\right\|_{V}^{2}=\left(\frac{d f}{d t}, D\left(\dot{E}-\dot{E}_{e}\right)\right) . \tag{4.38}
\end{equation*}
$$

Now, we will use Lemmata 4.3-4.5 to establish our convergence theory for the semi-discrete approximation. First, for any primal face $\kappa_{i}$, without loss of generality, we assume

$$
\kappa_{i}=\left\{(x, y, z): x=x_{i}, y_{i} \leq y \leq y_{i+1}, z_{i} \leq z \leq z_{i+1}\right\} .
$$

Let $\tau_{j}$ and $\tau_{k}$ be two primal elements sharing the face $\kappa_{i}$ and let $C_{j}$ and $C_{k}$, with $C_{j}<C_{k}$, be the center of $\tau_{j}$ and $\tau_{k}$ respectively. Then define

$$
\Lambda_{i}:=\left\{(x, y, z): C_{j} \leq x \leq C_{k}, y_{i} \leq y \leq y_{i+1}, z_{i} \leq z \leq z_{i+1}\right\}
$$

Now, let $\Pi_{h} \mathbf{B}$ be the standard piecewise linear element interpolation of the function B. That is, for all $x$ in $\Lambda_{i}$, we have

$$
\Pi_{h} \mathbf{B}(x)=\sum_{s=1}^{8} \mathbf{B}\left(\nu_{l_{s}}\right) \phi_{l_{s}}(x),
$$

where $\nu_{l_{s}}$ denotes the nodal points of $\Lambda_{i}$ and $\phi_{l_{s}}(x)$ is a linear function satisfying

$$
\begin{array}{ll}
\phi_{l_{s}}\left(\nu_{l_{r}}\right)=0, & \text { for } r \neq s \\
\phi_{l_{s}}\left(\nu_{l_{r}}\right)=1, & \text { for } r=s
\end{array}
$$

We remark here that for an interface primal face $\kappa_{i}$, the corresponding $\Lambda_{i}$ has two parts, one part in $\Omega_{1}$ and the other in $\Omega_{2}$. Let $\Lambda_{i}^{r}=\Lambda_{i} \cap \Omega_{r}$, for $r=1,2$, which is a cuboid. Then we define $\Pi_{h} \mathbf{B}$ in each of the two parts in a similar fashion. Clearly, $\Pi_{h} \mathbf{B}$ is a tri-linear function in each $\Lambda_{i}$ or $\Lambda_{i}^{r}$, for $r=1,2$.

Then we have
Lemma $4.3 f$ can be written into the following form:

$$
\begin{equation*}
f=\bar{J}+C^{\prime}\left(B_{f}-\Pi_{h} B_{f}\right)-\bar{H}+\bar{J}_{\Gamma}+g \tag{4.39}
\end{equation*}
$$

where

$$
\begin{equation*}
\bar{J}_{j}:=s_{j}^{\prime}\left(J_{f}^{\prime}-J_{e}\right)_{j}, \quad\left(\bar{J}_{\Gamma}\right)_{j}:=\sum_{r=1}^{2} \int_{\gamma_{r}}\left(\mathbf{J}_{\Gamma}-\Pi_{h} \mathbf{J}_{\Gamma}\right) \cdot \mathbf{n} d l . \tag{4.40}
\end{equation*}
$$

For $\sigma_{j} \cap \Gamma=\phi$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\bar{H}_{j}:=s_{j}^{\prime} \frac{1}{h_{j}} \int_{\sigma_{j}} \operatorname{curl}\left(\Pi_{h} \mathbf{H}-\mathbf{H}\right) \cdot \mathbf{n} d l \tag{4.41}
\end{equation*}
$$

and for $\sigma_{j} \cap \Gamma \neq \phi$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\bar{H}_{j}:=\sum_{k=1}^{2} s_{j}^{k} \frac{1}{h_{j}} \int_{\sigma_{j}} \operatorname{curl}\left(\Pi_{h} \mathbf{H}_{k}-\mathbf{H}_{k}\right) \cdot \mathbf{n} d l \tag{4.42}
\end{equation*}
$$

In addition, $\bar{J}_{\Gamma}$ is a vector having components corresponding to all interface primal edges and $g$ is a vector having components corresponding to the interface primal edges which lie on edges of $\Omega_{1}$.

Proof. We divide the proof into three parts.
(i) For any non-interface primal edge $\sigma_{j}$, from (1.1), we get

$$
\frac{d}{d t} \int_{\sigma_{j}} \epsilon \mathbf{E} \cdot \mathbf{n} d l-\int_{\sigma_{j}} \operatorname{curl} \mathbf{H} \cdot \mathbf{n} d l=\int_{\sigma_{j}} \mathbf{J} \cdot \mathbf{n} d l .
$$

Dividing both sides by $h_{j}$ gives

$$
\epsilon \frac{d E_{e}}{d t}-\frac{1}{h_{j}} \int_{\sigma_{j}} \operatorname{curl} \mathbf{H} \cdot \mathbf{n} d l=\frac{1}{h_{j}} \int_{\sigma_{j}} \mathbf{J} \cdot \mathbf{n} d l .
$$

Hence,

$$
\begin{aligned}
f_{j} & =\int_{\kappa_{j}^{\prime}} \mathbf{J} \cdot \mathbf{n} d \sigma-s_{j}^{\prime} \frac{1}{h_{j}} \int_{\sigma_{j}} \mathbf{J} \cdot \mathbf{n} d l+\left(C^{\prime} B_{f}\right)_{j}-s_{j}^{\prime} \frac{1}{h_{j}} \int_{\sigma_{j}} \operatorname{curl} \mathbf{H} \cdot \mathbf{n} d l \\
& =s_{j}^{\prime}\left(J_{f}^{\prime}-J_{e}\right)_{j}+\left(C^{\prime} B_{f}\right)_{j}-s_{j}^{\prime} \frac{1}{h_{j}} \int_{\sigma_{j}} \operatorname{curl} \mathbf{H} \cdot \mathbf{n} d l,
\end{aligned}
$$

where

$$
\left(J_{f}^{\prime}\right)_{j}:=\frac{1}{s_{j}^{\prime}} \int_{\kappa_{j}^{\prime}} \mathbf{J} \cdot \mathbf{n} d \sigma \quad \text { and } \quad\left(J_{e}\right)_{j}:=\frac{1}{h_{j}} \int_{\sigma_{j}} \mathbf{J} \cdot \mathbf{n} d l .
$$

We further write $f_{j}$ into the following form

$$
\begin{aligned}
f_{j}= & s_{j}^{\prime}\left(J_{f}^{\prime}-J_{e}\right)_{j}+\left(C^{\prime}\left(B_{f}-\Pi_{h} B_{f}\right)\right)_{j}+\left(C^{\prime} \Pi_{h} B_{f}\right)_{j} \\
& -s_{j}^{\prime} \frac{1}{h_{j}} \int_{\sigma_{j}} \operatorname{curl} \Pi_{h} \mathbf{H} \cdot \mathbf{n} d l+s_{j}^{\prime} \frac{1}{h_{j}} \int_{\sigma_{j}} \operatorname{curl}\left(\Pi_{h} \mathbf{H}-\mathbf{H}\right) \cdot \mathbf{n} d l .
\end{aligned}
$$

To calculate the term

$$
\left(C^{\prime} \Pi_{h} B_{f}\right)_{j}-s_{j}^{\prime} \frac{1}{h_{j}} \int_{\sigma_{j}} \operatorname{curl} \Pi_{h} \mathbf{H} \cdot \mathbf{n} d l,
$$

we consider the following figure:


Figure 2: An non-interface dual face $\kappa_{j}^{\prime}$ with normal $\mathbf{n}$

Since $\Pi_{h} \mathbf{B}$ is a linear function, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \left(C^{\prime} \Pi_{h} B_{f}\right)_{j}-s_{j}^{\prime} \frac{1}{h_{j}} \int_{\sigma_{j}} \operatorname{curl} \Pi_{h} \mathbf{H} \cdot \mathbf{n} d l \\
= & h_{k}^{\prime} \Pi_{h} \mathbf{H}_{x}\left(P_{4}\right)-h_{k}^{\prime} \Pi_{h} \mathbf{H}_{x}\left(P_{2}\right)+h_{i}^{\prime} \Pi_{h} \mathbf{H}_{y}\left(P_{1}\right)-h_{i}^{\prime} \Pi_{h} \mathbf{H}_{y}\left(P_{3}\right) \\
& -s_{j}^{\prime} \operatorname{curl} \Pi_{h} \mathbf{H} \cdot \mathbf{n}\left(Q_{1}\right) \\
= & h_{k}^{\prime} \Pi_{h} \mathbf{H}_{x}\left(P_{4}\right)-h_{k}^{\prime} \Pi_{h} \mathbf{H}_{x}\left(P_{2}\right)+h_{i}^{\prime} \Pi_{h} \mathbf{H}_{y}\left(P_{1}\right)-h_{i}^{\prime} \Pi_{h} \mathbf{H}_{y}\left(P_{3}\right) \\
& -s_{j}^{\prime}\left(\frac{\partial \Pi_{h} \mathbf{H}_{y}}{\partial x}\left(Q_{1}\right)-\frac{\partial \Pi_{h} \mathbf{H}_{x}}{\partial y}\left(Q_{1}\right)\right) \\
= & 0,
\end{aligned}
$$

where, in the above calculation, we have assumed, without loss of generality, that the normal direction $\mathbf{n}$ is the same as the $z$-axis direction. Hence, we have

$$
f_{j}=s_{j}^{\prime}\left(J_{f}^{\prime}-J_{e}\right)_{j}+\left(C^{\prime}\left(B_{f}-\Pi_{h} B_{f}\right)\right)_{j}+s_{j}^{\prime} \frac{1}{h_{j}} \int_{\sigma_{j}} \operatorname{curl}\left(\Pi_{h} \mathbf{H}-\mathbf{H}\right) \cdot \mathbf{n} d l .
$$

(ii) For each interface primal edge $\sigma_{j}$ not lying on the edges of $\Omega_{1}$, we have from (1.1) the following two equations

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \frac{d}{d t} \int_{\sigma_{j}} \epsilon_{1} \mathbf{E}_{1} \cdot \mathbf{n} d l-\int_{\sigma_{j}} \operatorname{curl} \mathbf{H}_{1} \cdot \mathbf{n} d l=\int_{\sigma_{j}} \mathbf{J} \cdot \mathbf{n} d l, \\
& \frac{d}{d t} \int_{\sigma_{j}} \epsilon_{2} \mathbf{E}_{2} \cdot \mathbf{n} d l-\int_{\sigma_{j}} \operatorname{curl} \mathbf{H}_{2} \cdot \mathbf{n} d l=\int_{\sigma_{j}} \mathbf{J} \cdot \mathbf{n} d l .
\end{aligned}
$$

Dividing both sides by $h_{j}$ and by the interface condition (1.10), we get

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \epsilon_{1} \frac{d E_{e}}{d t}-\frac{1}{h_{j}} \int_{\sigma_{j}} \operatorname{curl} \mathbf{H}_{1} \cdot \mathbf{n} d l=\frac{1}{h_{j}} \int_{\sigma_{j}} \mathbf{J} \cdot \mathbf{n} d l, \\
& \epsilon_{2} \frac{d E_{e}}{d t}-\frac{1}{h_{j}} \int_{\sigma_{j}} \operatorname{curl} \mathbf{H}_{2} \cdot \mathbf{n} d l=\frac{1}{h_{j}} \int_{\sigma_{j}} \mathbf{J} \cdot \mathbf{n} d l .
\end{aligned}
$$

Multiplying $s_{j}^{1}$ to the first equation and $s_{j}^{2}$ to the second equation and adding the resulting two equations together, we obtain

$$
\bar{s}_{j}^{\prime} \frac{d E_{e}}{d t}-\sum_{k=1}^{2} s_{j}^{k} \frac{1}{h_{j}} \int_{\sigma_{j}} \operatorname{curl} \mathbf{H}_{k} \cdot \mathbf{n} d l=s_{j}^{\prime} \frac{1}{h_{j}} \int_{\sigma_{j}} \mathbf{J} \cdot \mathbf{n} d l .
$$

So,

$$
f_{j}=s_{j}^{\prime}\left(J_{f}^{\prime}-J_{e}\right)_{j}+\sum_{r=1}^{2} \int_{\gamma_{r}} \mathbf{J}_{\Gamma} \cdot \mathbf{n} d l+\left(C^{\prime} B_{f}\right)_{j}-\sum_{k=1}^{2} s_{j}^{k} \frac{1}{h_{j}} \int_{\sigma_{j}} \mathbf{c u r l} \mathbf{H}_{k} \cdot \mathbf{n} d l .
$$

Since $\sigma_{j}$ does not lie on the edges of $\Omega_{1}, \gamma_{1}$ and $\gamma_{2}$ combine and form only one line, which is denoted by $\gamma_{j}$. Hence,

$$
f_{j}=s_{j}^{\prime}\left(J_{f}^{\prime}-J_{e}\right)_{j}+\int_{\gamma_{j}} \mathbf{J}_{\Gamma} \cdot \mathbf{n} d l+\left(C^{\prime} B_{f}\right)_{j}-\sum_{k=1}^{2} s_{j}^{k} \frac{1}{h_{j}} \int_{\sigma_{j}} \operatorname{curl} \mathbf{H}_{k} \cdot \mathbf{n} d l .
$$

We further write $f_{j}$ into the following form

$$
\begin{aligned}
f_{j}= & s_{j}^{\prime}\left(J_{f}^{\prime}-J_{e}\right)_{j}+\int_{\gamma_{j}} \Pi_{h} \mathbf{J}_{\Gamma} \cdot \mathbf{n} d l+\left(C^{\prime} \Pi_{h} B_{f}\right)_{j}-\sum_{k=1}^{2} s_{j}^{k} \frac{1}{h_{j}} \int_{\sigma_{j}} \operatorname{curl} \Pi_{h} \mathbf{H}_{k} \cdot \mathbf{n} d l \\
& +\int_{\gamma_{j}}\left(\mathbf{J}_{\Gamma}-\Pi_{h} \mathbf{J}_{\Gamma}\right) \cdot \mathbf{n} d l+\left(C^{\prime}\left(B_{f}-\Pi_{h} B_{f}\right)\right)_{j} \\
& +\sum_{k=1}^{2} s_{j}^{k} \frac{1}{h_{j}} \int_{\sigma_{j}} \operatorname{curl}\left(\Pi_{h} \mathbf{H}_{k}-\mathbf{H}_{k}\right) \cdot \mathbf{n} d l
\end{aligned}
$$

To calculate the term

$$
\int_{\gamma_{j}} \Pi_{h} \mathbf{J}_{\Gamma} \cdot \mathbf{n} d l+\left(C^{\prime} \Pi_{h} B_{f}\right)_{j}-\sum_{k=1}^{2} s_{j}^{k} \frac{1}{h_{j}} \int_{\sigma_{j}} \operatorname{curl} \Pi_{h} \mathbf{H}_{k} \cdot \mathbf{n} d l,
$$

we consider the following figure:


Figure 3: An interface dual face $\kappa_{j}^{\prime}$ with normal $\mathbf{n}$
In the figure above, the lower rectangle represents $\kappa_{j}^{1}$ while the upper rectangle represents $\kappa_{j}^{2}$. Notice that, since we are considering a uniform mesh, $Q_{2}$ is the
mid-point of $\gamma_{j}$. Since $\Pi_{h} \mathbf{B}_{k}$, for $k=1,2$, is a linear function, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\int_{\gamma_{j}} \Pi_{h} \mathbf{J}_{\Gamma} \cdot \mathbf{n} d l= & h_{k}^{\prime}\left(\Pi_{h} \mathbf{H}_{2 x}-\Pi_{h} \mathbf{H}_{1 x}\right)\left(Q_{2}\right) \\
\left(C^{\prime} \Pi_{h} B_{f}\right)_{j}= & h_{k}^{\prime} \Pi_{h} \mathbf{H}_{1 x}\left(P_{8}\right)-h_{k}^{\prime} \Pi_{h} \mathbf{H}_{2 x}\left(P_{6}\right)+h_{i}^{1} \Pi_{h} \mathbf{H}_{1 y}\left(P_{5}\right)+h_{i}^{2} \Pi_{h} \mathbf{H}_{2 y}\left(P_{5}\right) \\
& -h_{i}^{1} \Pi_{h} \mathbf{H}_{1 y}\left(P_{7}\right)-h_{i}^{2} \Pi_{h} \mathbf{H}_{2 y}\left(P_{7}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

and

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \sum_{k=1}^{2} s_{j}^{k} \frac{1}{h_{j}} \int_{\sigma_{j}} \operatorname{curl} \Pi_{h} \mathbf{H}_{k} \cdot \mathbf{n} d l \\
= & s_{j}^{1} \operatorname{curl} \Pi_{h} \mathbf{H}_{1} \cdot \mathbf{n}\left(Q_{2}\right)+s_{j}^{2} \operatorname{curl} \Pi_{h} \mathbf{H}_{k} \cdot \mathbf{n}\left(Q_{2}\right) \\
= & s_{j}^{1}\left(\frac{\partial \Pi_{h} \mathbf{H}_{1 y}}{\partial x}-\frac{\partial \Pi_{h} \mathbf{H}_{1 x}}{\partial y}\right)\left(Q_{2}\right)+s_{j}^{2}\left(\frac{\partial \Pi_{h} \mathbf{H}_{2 y}}{\partial x}-\frac{\partial \Pi_{h} \mathbf{H}_{2 x}}{\partial y}\right)\left(Q_{2}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

Collecting all terms, we have

$$
\int_{\gamma_{j}} \Pi_{h} \mathbf{J}_{\Gamma} \cdot \mathbf{n} d l+\left(C^{\prime} \Pi_{h} B_{f}\right)_{j}-\sum_{k=1}^{2} s_{j}^{k} \frac{1}{h_{j}} \int_{\sigma_{j}} \operatorname{curl} \Pi_{h} \mathbf{H}_{k} \cdot \mathbf{n} d l=0
$$

Hence, we obtain

$$
\begin{aligned}
f_{j}= & s_{j}^{\prime}\left(J_{f}^{\prime}-J_{e}\right)_{j}+\int_{\gamma_{j}}\left(\mathbf{J}_{\Gamma}-\Pi_{h} \mathbf{J}_{\Gamma}\right) \cdot \mathbf{n} d l+\left(C^{\prime}\left(B_{f}-\Pi_{h} B_{f}\right)\right)_{j} \\
& +\sum_{k=1}^{2} s_{j}^{k} \frac{1}{h_{j}} \int_{\sigma_{j}} \operatorname{curl}\left(\Pi_{h} \mathbf{H}_{k}-\mathbf{H}_{k}\right) \cdot \mathbf{n} d l
\end{aligned}
$$

(iii) For each interface primal edge $\sigma_{j}$ lying on the edges of $\Omega_{1}$, following the proof similiar to (ii), we have the following

$$
\begin{aligned}
f_{j}= & s_{j}^{\prime}\left(J_{f}^{\prime}-J_{e}\right)_{j}+\sum_{r=1}^{2} \int_{\gamma_{r}} \Pi_{h} \mathbf{J}_{\Gamma} \cdot \mathbf{n} d l+\left(C^{\prime} \Pi_{h} B_{f}\right)_{j}-\sum_{k=1}^{2} s_{j}^{k} \frac{1}{h_{j}} \int_{\sigma_{j}} \operatorname{curl} \Pi_{h} \mathbf{H}_{k} \cdot \mathbf{n} d l \\
& +\sum_{r=1}^{2} \int_{\gamma_{2}}\left(\mathbf{J}_{\Gamma}-\Pi_{h} \mathbf{J}_{\Gamma}\right) \cdot \mathbf{n} d l+\left(C^{\prime}\left(B_{f}-\Pi_{h} B_{f}\right)\right)_{j} \\
& +\sum_{k=1}^{2} s_{j}^{k} \frac{1}{h_{j}} \int_{\sigma_{j}} \operatorname{curl}\left(\Pi_{h} \mathbf{H}_{k}-\mathbf{H}_{k}\right) \cdot \mathbf{n} d l
\end{aligned}
$$

To calculate the term

$$
\sum_{r=1}^{2} \int_{\gamma_{r}} \Pi_{h} \mathbf{J}_{\Gamma} \cdot \mathbf{n} d l+\left(C^{\prime} \Pi_{h} B_{f}\right)_{j}-\sum_{k=1}^{2} s_{j}^{k} \frac{1}{h_{j}} \int_{\sigma_{j}} \operatorname{curl} \Pi_{h} \mathbf{H}_{k} \cdot \mathbf{n} d l
$$

we consider the following figure:


Figure 4: An interface dual face $\kappa_{j}^{\prime}$ with normal $\mathbf{n}$
In the figure above, the smaller part represents $\kappa_{j}^{1}$ and the remaining part represents $\kappa_{j}^{2}$. Since $\Pi_{h} \mathbf{B}_{k}$, for $k=1,2$, is a linear function, we have

$$
\sum_{r=1}^{2} \int_{\gamma_{r}} \Pi_{h} \mathbf{J}_{\Gamma} \cdot \mathbf{n} d l=-h_{i}^{1}\left(\Pi_{h} \mathbf{H}_{2 y}-\Pi_{h} \mathbf{H}_{1 y}\right)\left(R_{1}\right)+h_{k}^{1}\left(\Pi_{h} \mathbf{H}_{2 x}-\Pi_{h} \mathbf{H}_{1 x}\right)\left(R_{2}\right)
$$

and

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left(C^{\prime} \Pi_{h} B_{f}\right)_{j}= & h_{k}^{1} \Pi_{h} \mathbf{H}_{1 x}\left(P_{12}\right)+h_{k}^{2} \Pi_{h} \mathbf{H}_{1 x}\left(P_{12}\right)-h_{k}^{\prime} \Pi_{h} \mathbf{H}_{2 x}\left(P_{10}\right)+h_{i}^{\prime} \Pi_{h} \mathbf{H}_{1 y}\left(P_{9}\right) \\
& -h_{i}^{1} \Pi_{h} \mathbf{H}_{1 y}\left(P_{11}\right)-h_{i}^{2} \Pi_{h} \mathbf{H}_{2 y}\left(P_{11}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

and

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \sum_{k=1}^{2} s_{j}^{k} \frac{1}{h_{j}} \int_{\sigma_{j}} \operatorname{curl} \Pi_{h} \mathbf{H}_{k} \cdot \mathbf{n} d l \\
= & s_{j}^{1} \operatorname{curl} \Pi_{h} \mathbf{H}_{1} \cdot \mathbf{n}\left(Q_{3}\right)+s_{j}^{2} \operatorname{curl} \Pi_{h} \mathbf{H}_{k} \cdot \mathbf{n}\left(Q_{3}\right) \\
= & s_{j}^{1}\left(\frac{\partial \Pi_{h} \mathbf{H}_{1 y}}{\partial x}-\frac{\partial \Pi_{h} \mathbf{H}_{1 x}}{\partial y}\right)\left(Q_{3}\right)+s_{j}^{2}\left(\frac{\partial \Pi_{h} \mathbf{H}_{2 y}}{\partial x}-\frac{\partial \Pi_{h} \mathbf{H}_{2 x}}{\partial y}\right)\left(Q_{3}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

where $R_{1}$ and $R_{2}$ denote the mid-points of $\gamma_{1}$ and $\gamma_{2}$ respectively. Furthermore, we have

$$
\sum_{r=1}^{2} \int_{\gamma_{r}} \Pi_{h} \mathbf{J}_{\Gamma} \cdot \mathbf{n} d l=-h_{i}^{1}\left(\Pi_{h} \mathbf{H}_{2 y}-\Pi_{h} \mathbf{H}_{1 y}\right)\left(Q_{3}\right)+h_{k}^{1}\left(\Pi_{h} \mathbf{H}_{2 x}-\Pi_{h} \mathbf{H}_{1 x}\right)\left(Q_{3}\right)+g_{j},
$$

where

$$
\begin{aligned}
g_{j}:= & h_{i}^{1}\left(\Pi_{h} \mathbf{H}_{2 y}-\Pi_{h} \mathbf{H}_{1 y}\right)\left(Q_{3}\right)-h_{k}^{1}\left(\Pi_{h} \mathbf{H}_{2 x}-\Pi_{h} \mathbf{H}_{1 x}\right)\left(Q_{3}\right) \\
& -h_{i}^{1}\left(\Pi_{h} \mathbf{H}_{2 y}-\Pi_{h} \mathbf{H}_{1 y}\right)\left(R_{1}\right)+h_{k}^{1}\left(\Pi_{h} \mathbf{H}_{2 x}-\Pi_{h} \mathbf{H}_{1 x}\right)\left(R_{2}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

By the definition of $\mathbf{J}_{\Gamma}$, we have

$$
\begin{align*}
g_{j}= & h_{i}^{1}\left(\Pi_{h} \mathbf{J}_{\Gamma} \cdot \mathbf{n}\left(Q_{3}\right)-\Pi_{h} \mathbf{J}_{\Gamma} \cdot \mathbf{n}\left(R_{1}\right)\right)  \tag{4.43}\\
& +h_{k}^{1}\left(\Pi_{h} \mathbf{J}_{\Gamma} \cdot \mathbf{n}\left(R_{2}\right)-\Pi_{h} \mathbf{J}_{\Gamma} \cdot \mathbf{n}\left(Q_{3}\right)\right)
\end{align*}
$$

where we remark that $\mathbf{n}$ is the normal vector of the dual face $\kappa_{j}^{\prime}$. Collecting all the terms, we obtain

$$
\sum_{r=1}^{2} \int_{\gamma_{r}} \Pi_{h} \mathbf{J}_{\Gamma} \cdot \mathbf{n} d l+\left(C^{\prime} \Pi_{h} B_{f}\right)_{j}-\sum_{k=1}^{2} s_{j}^{k} \frac{1}{h_{j}} \int_{\sigma_{j}} \operatorname{curl} \Pi_{h} \mathbf{H}_{k} \cdot \mathbf{n} d l=g_{j}
$$

and finally the following

$$
\begin{aligned}
f_{j}= & s_{j}^{\prime}\left(J_{f}^{\prime}-J_{e}\right)_{j}+\sum_{r=1}^{2} \int_{\gamma_{r}}\left(\mathbf{J}_{\Gamma}-\Pi_{h} \mathbf{J}_{\Gamma}\right) \cdot \mathbf{n} d l+\left(C^{\prime}\left(B_{f}-\Pi_{h} B_{f}\right)\right)_{j} \\
& +\sum_{k=1}^{2} s_{j}^{k} \frac{1}{h_{j}} \int_{\sigma_{j}} \operatorname{curl}\left(\Pi_{h} \mathbf{H}_{k}-\mathbf{H}_{k}\right) \cdot \mathbf{n} d l+g_{j}
\end{aligned}
$$

Summarizing the results obtained in (i)-(iii), Lemma 4.3 follows.

Now, we give some estimates for $E-E_{e}$. We will consider the two cases: $C\left(E-E_{e}\right)(t) \neq 0$ for a.e. $t \in[0, T]$; and $C\left(E-E_{e}\right)(t)=0$ for $t \in\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right)$ with $\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right) \subset[0, T]$. First we show

Lemma 4.4 Assume that $C\left(E-E_{e}\right) \neq 0$ for a.e. $t \in[0, T]$. Then there exist a constant $K$ independent of $h$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|E-E_{e}\right\|_{W_{\Gamma}} \leq K\left\|E-E_{e}\right\|_{V} \tag{4.44}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. By (3.15) in Lemma 3.5, we have for any $u \in \mathbb{R}^{M}$ with $\left.u\right|_{\partial \Omega}=0$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(S^{\prime} u, D u\right) \leq K\left(D^{\prime} S^{-1} C u, C u\right) \tag{4.45}
\end{equation*}
$$

Consider the following auxillary problem: Find $\tilde{u} \in \mathbb{R}^{M}$ such that

$$
\begin{cases}C \tilde{u}=-S\left(\dot{B}-\dot{B}_{f}\right), & \text { for all interior primal face. }  \tag{4.46}\\ \tilde{u}=E-E_{e}, & \text { for all interface primal edge. }\end{cases}
$$

Clearly, by (4.23), the problem (4.46) has a solution $\tilde{u}=E-E_{e}$. Now, we solve the problem (4.46) in the following way. For each $\tilde{u}_{j}$ corresponding to an primal edge $\sigma_{j}$ in $\Omega_{2}$, we take $\tilde{u}_{j}=\left(E-E_{e}\right)_{j}$, i.e., the component of $E-E_{e}$ corresponding to $\sigma_{j}$. Then, with the components corresponding to $\Omega_{2}$ and $\Gamma$ fixed, we rewrite (4.46) into the following linear system

$$
\begin{equation*}
G_{1} D \tilde{u}=b \tag{4.47}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $b$ is a vector containing all the related known components and $G_{1}$ is the restriction of $G$ to $\Omega_{1}$. We remark here that in the system (4.47), the number of equations is in general greater than the number of unknowns. However, since (4.46) has a solution, the system (4.47) is consistent.

Since the matrix $G_{1}$ has the same structure as the matrix $G$, by Lemma 3.3 , there are $O\left(N^{3}\right)$ free variables in the system (4.47). We choose these free variables to be all equal to some interface components with the condition that each component appears $O(N)$ times. We can do this since there are $O\left(N^{2}\right)$ interface components. Then, after fixing free variables, the other components can be uniquely determined by solving the system (4.47).

Putting $\tilde{u}$ into the equation (4.45), we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(S^{\prime} \tilde{u}, D \tilde{u}\right) \leq K\left(D^{\prime} S^{-1} C \tilde{u}, C \tilde{u}\right) \tag{4.48}
\end{equation*}
$$

For the left hand side, we have

$$
\left(S^{\prime} \tilde{u}, D \tilde{u}\right) \geq\left(S^{\prime} \bar{u}, D \bar{u}\right),
$$

where $\bar{u}$ denotes a vector having the same interface components and free components as $\tilde{u}$ and having the remaining components vanish. So, we have

$$
\left(S^{\prime} \bar{u}, D \bar{u}\right) \geq K\left\|E-E_{e}\right\|_{W_{\Gamma}}^{2} .
$$

For the right hand side, since $\tilde{u}$ is the solution to the system (4.47), we have

$$
\left(D^{\prime} S^{-1} C \tilde{u}, C \tilde{u}\right)=\left(D^{\prime}\left(\dot{B}-\dot{B}_{f}\right), S\left(\dot{B}-\dot{B}_{f}\right)\right)
$$

Multiplying both sides of (4.23) by $D^{\prime}\left(\dot{B}-\dot{B}_{f}\right)$, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \left(S\left(\dot{B}-\dot{B}_{f}\right), D^{\prime}\left(\dot{B}-\dot{B}_{f}\right)\right) \\
= & -\left(C\left(E-E_{e}\right), D^{\prime}\left(\dot{B}-\dot{B}_{f}\right)\right) \\
\leq & K\left(D^{\prime} S^{-1} C\left(E-E_{e}\right), C\left(E-E_{e}\right)\right)^{\frac{1}{2}}\left(S\left(\dot{B}-\dot{B}_{f}\right), D^{\prime}\left(\dot{B}-\dot{B}_{f}\right)\right)^{\frac{1}{2}},
\end{aligned}
$$

where we have applied the Cauchy-Schwarz inequality in the last step. So, we derive

$$
\left(S\left(\dot{B}-\dot{B}_{f}\right), D^{\prime}\left(\dot{B}-\dot{B}_{f}\right)\right) \leq K\left(D^{\prime} S^{-1} C\left(E-E_{e}\right), C\left(E-E_{e}\right)\right)
$$

which completes the proof.

We remark here that (4.44) is the discrete analog of the following trace theorem

$$
\int_{\Gamma}|u|^{2} d s \leq K\left(\int_{\Omega}|u|^{2} d x+\int_{\Omega}|\nabla u|^{2} d x\right)
$$

for any $u \in H^{1}(\Omega)$ and of the Poincare's inequality

$$
\int_{\Gamma}|u|^{2} d s \leq K \int_{\Omega}|\nabla u|^{2} d x
$$

for any $u \in H_{0}^{1}(\Omega)$.
In addition to Lemma 4.4, we have the following

Lemma 4.5 Assume that $C\left(E-E_{e}\right) \neq 0$. Then there exist a constant $K$ independent of $h$ such that

$$
\begin{align*}
& \max _{\sigma_{j} \in \Gamma}\left|E-E_{e}\right|_{j} \leq K\left\|E-E_{e}\right\|_{V}  \tag{4.49}\\
& \max _{\sigma_{j} \in \Omega}\left|E-E_{e}\right|_{j} \leq K\left\|E-E_{e}\right\|_{V} \tag{4.50}
\end{align*}
$$

Proof. The proof of this lemma is similar to that of Lemma 4.4. For (4.49), we take all the $O\left(N^{3}\right)$ free variables in (4.47) as $\max _{\sigma_{j} \in \Gamma}\left|E-E_{e}\right|_{j}$. For (4.50), we take all the $O\left(N^{3}\right)$ free variables in (4.47) as $\max _{\sigma_{j} \in \Omega}\left|E-E_{e}\right|_{j}$. Then the result follows.

Now, we proceed with the convergence analysis on the semi-discrete approximation (4.1)-(4.2). The following theorem gives the $V$-norm estimate for $E-E_{e}$.

Theorem 4.5 Suppose that $\mathbf{B} \in W^{2,1}\left(0, T ; H^{3}\left(\Omega_{r}\right)\right)^{3}$, for $r=1,2$, is the true solution of (1.1)-(1.4), and that $\mathbf{J} \in W^{2,1}\left(0, T ; H^{2}(\Omega)\right)^{3}$ and $\mathbf{J}_{\Gamma} \in W^{2,1}\left(0, T ; H^{3}(\Gamma)\right)^{3}$. Let $E$ be the solution of (4.10)-(4.11) on uniform grid. Then

$$
\begin{align*}
& \max _{0 \leq t \leq T}\left\|\left(E-E_{e}\right)(t)\right\|_{V} \\
\leq & K h^{2}\left(\sum_{r=1}^{2}\|\mathbf{B}\|_{W^{2,1}\left(0, T ; H^{3}\left(\Omega_{r}\right)\right)^{3}}+\|\mathbf{J}\|_{W^{2,1}\left(0, T ; H^{2}(\Omega)\right)^{3}}+\left\|\mathbf{J}_{\Gamma}\right\|_{W^{2,1}\left(0, T ; H^{3}(\Gamma)\right)^{3}}\right) . \tag{4.51}
\end{align*}
$$

Proof. Integrating both sides of (4.38) from 0 to $t$ and by the initial condition (4.37), we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|\left(\dot{E}-\dot{E}_{e}\right)(t)\right\|_{W^{\prime}}^{2}+\left\|\left(E-E_{e}\right)(t)\right\|_{V}^{2}=2 \int_{0}^{t}\left(\frac{d f}{d t}, D\left(\dot{E}-\dot{E}_{e}\right)\right)(s) d s \tag{4.52}
\end{equation*}
$$

Integration by parts then yields,

$$
\int_{0}^{t}\left(\frac{d f}{d t}, D\left(\dot{E}-\dot{E}_{e}\right)\right)(s) d s=\left(\frac{d f}{d t}, D\left(E-E_{e}\right)\right)(t)-\int_{0}^{t}\left(\frac{d^{2} f}{d t^{2}}, D\left(E-E_{e}\right)\right)(s) d s
$$

By (4.39), we know that

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \left(\frac{d f}{d t}, D\left(E-E_{e}\right)\right)(t) \\
= & \left(\frac{d}{d t}\left(\bar{J}+C^{\prime}\left(B_{f}-\Pi_{h} B_{f}\right)-\bar{H}+\bar{J}_{\Gamma}+g\right), D\left(E-E_{e}\right)\right)(t) \\
= & \left(\frac{d}{d t}\left(\bar{J}-\bar{H}+\bar{J}_{\Gamma}+g\right), D\left(E-E_{e}\right)\right)(t)+\left(D^{\prime}\left(\dot{B}_{f}-\Pi_{h} \dot{B}_{f}\right), C\left(E-E_{e}\right)\right)(t) .
\end{aligned}
$$

Notice that the theorem is trivially true at time $t$ if $C\left(E-E_{e}\right)(t)=0$. So, without loss of generality, we assume that $C\left(E-E_{e}\right)(t) \neq 0$ for all $0<t<T$. Now, we estimate the above equation term by term.

By the Cauchy-Schwarz inequality, we have

$$
\left(\frac{d \bar{J}}{d t}, D\left(E-E_{e}\right)\right)(t) \leq\left\|S^{\prime-1} \frac{d \bar{J}^{d}}{d t}\right\|_{W^{\prime}}\left\|E-E_{e}\right\|_{W^{\prime}}
$$

and by Lemma 3.5, we have

$$
\left(\frac{d \bar{J}}{d t}, D\left(E-E_{e}\right)\right)(t) \leq\left\|S^{\prime-1} \frac{d \bar{J}}{d t}\right\|_{W^{\prime}}\left\|E-E_{e}\right\|_{V}
$$

By the Sobolev embedding theorem, $\left(\dot{J}_{f}^{\prime}-\dot{J}_{e}\right)_{j}$ defines a bounded linear functional on the space $H^{2}\left(\tau_{i}^{\prime} \cup \tau_{k}^{\prime}\right)^{3}$ where $\tau_{i}^{\prime}$ and $\tau_{k}^{\prime}$ are two dual elements sharing the same face $\kappa_{j}^{\prime}$. Clearly, $\left(\dot{J}_{f}^{\prime}-\dot{J}_{e}\right)_{j}$ vanishes for any linear functions since we are considering uniform mesh. By the Bramble-Hilbert lemma,

$$
\left|\left(\dot{J}_{f}^{\prime}-\dot{J}_{e}\right)_{j}\right| \leq K h^{\frac{1}{2}}|\dot{\mathbf{J}}|_{H^{2}\left(\tau_{i}^{\prime} \cup \tau_{k}^{\prime}\right)^{3}} .
$$

From (4.40), we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left\|S^{\prime-1} \frac{d \bar{J}}{d t}\right\|_{W^{\prime}}^{2} & =\sum_{j=1}^{M_{1}} \bar{s}_{j}^{\prime} h_{j} \bar{s}_{j}^{\prime-2} s_{j}^{\prime 2}\left|\left(\dot{J}_{f}^{\prime}-\dot{J}_{e}\right)_{j}\right|^{2} \\
& \leq K h^{4} \sum_{j=1}^{M_{1}}|\dot{\mathbf{J}}|_{H^{2}\left(\tau_{i}^{\prime} \cup \tau_{k}^{\prime}\right)^{3}} \\
& =K h^{4}|\dot{\mathbf{J}}|_{H^{2}(\Omega)^{3}}^{2}
\end{aligned}
$$

By the Cauchy-Schwarz inequality and Lemma 3.5, we have

$$
-\left(\frac{d \bar{H}}{d t}, D\left(E-E_{e}\right)\right)(t) \leq K\left\|S^{\prime-1} \frac{d \bar{H}}{d t}\right\|_{W^{\prime}}\left\|E-E_{e}\right\|_{V}
$$

Corresponding to each non-interface primal edge $\sigma_{j}$, we have

$$
\frac{1}{h_{j}} \int_{\sigma_{j}} \operatorname{curl}\left(\Pi_{h} \dot{\mathbf{H}}-\dot{\mathbf{H}}\right) \cdot \mathbf{n} d l
$$

defines a bounded linear functional on the space $H^{3}\left(\tau_{i}^{\prime} \cup \tau_{k}^{\prime}\right)^{3}$ and vanishes for any quadratic functions. So,

$$
\left|\frac{1}{h_{j}} \int_{\sigma_{j}} \operatorname{curl}\left(\Pi_{h} \dot{\mathbf{H}}-\dot{\mathbf{H}}\right) \cdot \mathbf{n} d l\right| \leq K h^{\frac{1}{2}}|\dot{\mathbf{H}}|_{H^{3}\left(\tau_{i}^{\prime} \cup \tau_{k}^{\prime}\right)^{3}}
$$

Similarly, corresponding to each interface primal edge $\sigma_{j}$, for $k=1,2$, we have

$$
\left|\frac{1}{h_{j}} \int_{\sigma_{j}} \operatorname{curl}\left(\Pi_{h} \dot{\mathbf{H}}_{k}-\dot{\mathbf{H}}_{k}\right) \cdot \mathbf{n} d l\right| \leq K h^{\frac{1}{2}}|\dot{\mathbf{H}}|_{H^{3}\left(\left(\tau_{i}^{\prime} \cup \tau_{k}^{\prime}\right) \cap \Omega_{k}\right)^{3}}
$$

Hence, we obtain

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left\|S^{\prime-1} \frac{d \bar{H}}{d t}\right\|_{W^{\prime}}^{2} & =\sum_{j=1}^{M_{1}} \bar{s}_{j}^{\prime} h_{j} \bar{s}_{j}^{\prime-2}\left|\frac{d \bar{H}_{j}}{d t}\right|^{2} \\
& \leq K h^{4} \sum_{k=1}^{2} \sum_{j=1}^{M_{1}}|\dot{\mathbf{H}}|_{H^{3}\left(\left(\tau_{i}^{\prime} \cup \tau_{k}^{\prime}\right) \cap \Omega_{k}\right)^{3}}^{2} \\
& =K h^{4} \sum_{k=1}^{2}|\dot{\mathbf{H}}|_{H^{3}\left(\Omega_{k}\right)^{3}}^{2} .
\end{aligned}
$$

By the Cauchy-Schwarz inequality, we have

$$
\left(\frac{d \bar{J}_{\Gamma}}{d t}, D\left(E-E_{e}\right)\right)(t) \leq\left\|D^{-1} \frac{d \bar{J}_{\Gamma}}{d t}\right\|_{W_{\Gamma}}\left\|E-E_{e}\right\|_{W_{\Gamma}}
$$

By Lemma 4.4, we have

$$
\left(\frac{d \bar{J}_{\Gamma}}{d t}, D\left(E-E_{e}\right)\right)(t) \leq K\left\|D^{-1} \frac{d \bar{J}_{\Gamma}}{d t}\right\|_{W_{\Gamma}}\left\|E-E_{e}\right\|_{V}
$$

By Sobolev embedding theorem, the term

$$
\sum_{r=1}^{2} \int_{\gamma_{r}}\left(\dot{\mathbf{J}}_{\Gamma}-\Pi_{h} \dot{\mathbf{J}}_{\Gamma}\right) \cdot \mathbf{n} d l
$$

defines a bounded linear functional on the space $H^{2}\left(\kappa_{i} \cup \kappa_{l}\right)^{3}$, where $\kappa_{i}$ and $\kappa_{l}$ are two interface primal faces sharing the same edge $\sigma_{j}$, and vanishes for any linear functions. By the Bramble-Hilbert lemma, we have

$$
\left|\sum_{r=1}^{2} \int_{\gamma_{r}}\left(\dot{\mathbf{J}}_{\Gamma}-\Pi_{h} \dot{\mathbf{J}}_{\Gamma}\right) \cdot \mathbf{n} d l\right| \leq K h^{2}\left|\dot{\mathbf{J}}_{\Gamma}\right|_{H^{2}\left(\kappa_{i} \cup \kappa_{l}\right)^{3}}
$$

So, we obtain

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left\|D^{-1} \frac{d \bar{J}_{\Gamma}}{d t}\right\|_{W_{\Gamma}}^{2} & =\sum_{\sigma_{j} \in \Gamma} h_{j}^{2} h_{j}^{-2}\left|\frac{d\left(\bar{J}_{\Gamma}\right)_{j}}{d t}\right|^{2} \\
& \leq K h^{4} \sum_{\sigma_{j} \in \Gamma}\left|\dot{\mathbf{J}}_{\Gamma}\right|_{H^{2}\left(\kappa_{i} \cup \kappa_{l}\right)^{3}}^{2} \\
& =K h^{4}\left|\dot{\mathbf{J}}_{\Gamma}\right|_{H^{2}(\Gamma)^{3}}^{2} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Notice that $g$ has only non-zero components corresponding to interface primal edge lying on edges of $\Omega_{1}$, there are only $O(N)$ non-zero components in $g$. By the Cauchy-Schwarz inequality, we have

$$
\left(\frac{d g}{d t}, D\left(E-E_{e}\right)\right)(t) \leq K h^{\frac{1}{2}}\left\|\frac{d g}{d t}\right\|_{2} \max _{\sigma_{j} \in \Gamma}\left|E-E_{e}\right|_{j}
$$

and by Lemma 4.5, we have

$$
\left(\frac{d g}{d t}, D\left(E-E_{e}\right)\right)(t) \leq K h^{\frac{1}{2}}\left\|\frac{d g}{d t}\right\|_{2}\left\|E-E_{e}\right\|_{V}
$$

From (4.43), we know that (see Figure 4)

$$
\dot{g}_{j}=h_{i}^{1}\left(\Pi_{h} \dot{\mathbf{J}}_{\Gamma} \cdot \mathbf{n}\left(Q_{3}\right)-\Pi_{h} \dot{\mathbf{J}}_{\Gamma} \cdot \mathbf{n}\left(R_{1}\right)\right)+h_{k}^{1}\left(\Pi_{h} \dot{\mathbf{J}}_{\Gamma} \cdot \mathbf{n}\left(R_{2}\right)-\Pi_{h} \dot{\mathbf{J}}_{\Gamma} \cdot \mathbf{n}\left(Q_{3}\right)\right)
$$

Now, we estimate $\dot{g}_{j}$. First

$$
\left|\dot{g}_{j}\right| \leq K h^{2}\left\|\dot{\mathbf{J}}_{\Gamma}\right\|_{C^{1}(\Gamma)^{3}}
$$

So,

$$
\left\|\frac{d g}{d t}\right\|_{2}^{2}=\sum_{\sigma_{j}}\left|\dot{g}_{j}\right|^{2} \leq K h^{3}\left\|\dot{\mathbf{J}}_{\Gamma}\right\|_{C^{1}(\Gamma)^{3}}^{2}
$$

where the above summation is taken over all the primal edges $\sigma_{j}$ lying on the edges of $\Omega_{1}$ and has $O(N)$ terms.

By the definition of $V$-norm, we have

$$
\left(D^{\prime}\left(\dot{B}_{f}-\Pi_{h} \dot{B}_{f}\right), C\left(E-E_{e}\right)\right)(t) \leq K\left\|\dot{B}_{f}-\Pi_{h} \dot{B}_{f}\right\|_{W}\left\|E-E_{e}\right\|_{V}
$$

Notice that $\dot{B}_{f}-\Pi_{h} \dot{B}_{f}$ defines a bounded linear functional on $H^{2}\left(\tau_{i} \cup \tau_{k}\right)^{3}$, where $\tau_{i}$ and $\tau_{k}$ are two primal elements sharing the same face $\kappa_{j}$, and vanishes for any linear functions. So,

$$
\left|\left(\dot{B}_{f}-\Pi_{h} \dot{B}_{f}\right)_{j}\right| \leq K h^{\frac{1}{2}}|\dot{\mathbf{B}}|_{H^{2}\left(\tau_{i} \cup \tau_{k}\right)^{3}} .
$$

Hence, we obtain

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left\|\dot{B}_{f}-\Pi_{h} \dot{B}_{f}\right\|_{W}^{2} & =\sum_{j=1}^{F_{1}} s_{j} \bar{h}_{j}\left|\left(\dot{B}_{f}-\Pi_{h} \dot{B}_{f}\right)_{j}\right|^{2} \\
& \leq K h^{4} \sum_{j=1}^{F_{1}}|\dot{\mathbf{B}}|_{H^{2}\left(\tau_{1} \cup \tau_{k}\right)^{3}}^{2} \\
& =K h^{4} \sum_{r=1}^{2}|\dot{\mathbf{B}}|_{H^{2}\left(\Omega_{r}\right)^{3}}^{2} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Collecting the above results, we obtain

$$
\left(\frac{d f}{d t}, D\left(E-E_{c}\right)\right)(t) \leq K h^{2}\left(\sum_{r=1}^{2}|\dot{\mathbf{B}}|_{H^{3}\left(\Omega_{r}\right)^{3}}+|\dot{\mathbf{J}}|_{H^{2}(\Omega)^{3}}+\left\|\dot{\mathbf{J}}_{\Gamma}\right\|_{H^{3}(\mathrm{I})^{3}}\right)\left\|E-E_{c}\right\|_{V}
$$

Following a similar proof, we have

$$
\left(\frac{d^{2} f}{d t^{2}}, D\left(E-E_{e}\right)\right)(t) \leq K h^{2}\left(\sum_{r=1}^{2}\left|\ddot{\mathbf{B}}\left\|_{H^{3}(\Omega+)^{3}}+|\ddot{\mathbf{J}}|_{H^{2}(\Omega)^{3}}+\right\| \ddot{\mathbf{J}}_{\mathrm{V}} \|_{H^{3}\left(\mathrm{I}^{2}\right)^{3}}\right)\left\|E-E_{r}\right\|_{V}\right.
$$

Then, from (4.52). we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \left\|\left(E-E_{r}\right)(t)\right\|_{1}^{2} \\
\leq & K h^{2} \max _{0 \leq t \leq T}\left\|\left(E-E_{c}\right)(t)\right\|_{1} \\
& \times\left(\sum_{r=1}^{2}\|\mathbf{B}\|_{W \cdot 2:}^{\left(0, T: H^{3}(\Omega,)^{1}\right.}+\|\mathbf{J}\|_{W^{2: 2}\left(0, T: H^{2}(\Omega)\right)^{3}}+\left\|\mathbf{J}_{1}\right\|_{\left.W^{2,1}\left(0, T: H^{3}(T)\right)^{3}\right)}\right.
\end{aligned}
$$

By the Young's inequality, we obtain the desired result.

The following theorem gives our main result in this section.

Theorem 4.6 Suppose that $\mathbf{B} \in W^{2,1}\left(0, T ; H^{3}\left(\Omega_{r}\right)\right)^{3}$ and $\mathbf{E} \in W^{1,1}\left(0, T ; H^{3}\left(\Omega_{r}\right)\right)^{3}$, for $r=1,2$, is the true solution of (1.1)-(1.4), and that $\mathbf{J} \in W^{2,1}\left(0, T ; H^{2}(\Omega)\right)^{3}$ and $\mathbf{J}_{\Gamma} \in W^{2,1}\left(0, T ; H^{3}(\Gamma)\right)^{3}$. Let $(E, B)$ be the solution of (4.10)-(4.11) on uniform grid. Then

$$
\begin{align*}
& \max _{0 \leq t \leq T}\left(\left\|\left(E-E_{e}\right)(t)\right\|_{W^{\prime}}+\left\|\left(B-B_{f}\right)(t)\right\|_{W}\right) \\
\leq & K h^{2}\left(\sum_{r=1}^{2}\|\mathbf{B}\|_{W^{2,1}\left(0, T ; H^{3}\left(\Omega_{r}\right)\right)^{3}}+\sum_{r=1}^{2}\|\mathbf{E}\|_{W^{1,1}\left(0, T ; H^{3}\left(\Omega_{r}\right)\right)^{3}}\right.  \tag{4.53}\\
& \left.+\|\mathbf{J}\|_{W^{2,1}\left(0, T ; H^{2}(\Omega)\right)^{3}}+\left\|\mathbf{J}_{\Gamma}\right\|_{W^{2,1}\left(0, T ; H^{3}(\Gamma)\right)^{3}}\right) .
\end{align*}
$$

Proof. Multiplying both sides of (4.23) by $D^{\prime}\left(B-B_{f}\right)(t)$, we have

$$
\left(S \frac{d}{d t}\left(B-B_{f}\right), D^{\prime}\left(B-B_{f}\right)\right)(t)+\left(C\left(E-E_{e}\right), D^{\prime}\left(B-B_{f}\right)\right)(t)=0
$$

By the Cauchy-Schwarz inequality, we have

$$
\frac{1}{2} \frac{d}{d t}\left\|\left(B-B_{f}\right)(t)\right\|_{W}^{2} \leq K\left\|\left(E-E_{e}\right)(t)\right\|_{V}\left\|\left(B-B_{f}\right)(t)\right\|_{W}
$$

Integrating from 0 to $t$, we obtain

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left\|\left(B-B_{f}\right)(t)\right\|_{W}^{2} & \leq K \int_{0}^{t}\left\|\left(E-E_{e}\right)(s)\right\|_{V}^{2} d s+\int_{0}^{t}\left\|\left(B-B_{f}\right)(s)\right\|_{W}^{2} d s \\
& \leq K \max _{0 \leq t \leq T}\left\|\left(E-E_{e}\right)(t)\right\|_{V}^{2}+\int_{0}^{t}\left\|\left(B-B_{f}\right)(s)\right\|_{W}^{2} d s
\end{aligned}
$$

Applying the Gronwall's inequality, we obtain

$$
\left\|\left(B-B_{f}\right)(t)\right\|_{W}^{2} \leq K \max _{0 \leq t \leq T}\left\|\left(E-E_{e}\right)(t)\right\|_{V}^{2}
$$

Then the desired result for $B-B_{f}$ follows from Theorem 4.5.
Now, let

$$
I:=\left\{t \in[0, T]: C\left(E-E_{e}\right)(t) \neq 0\right\} .
$$

Then for any $t \in I$, by Lemma 3.5, we have

$$
\left\|\left(E-E_{e}\right)(t)\right\|_{W^{\prime}} \leq K\left\|\left(E-E_{e}\right)(t)\right\|_{V}
$$

which with Theorem 4.5 yields

$$
\begin{align*}
& \max _{t \in I}\left\|\left(E-E_{e}\right)(t)\right\|_{W^{\prime}} \\
\leq & K h^{2}\left(\sum_{r=1}^{2}\|\mathbf{B}\|_{W^{2,1}\left(0, T ; H^{3}\left(\Omega_{r}\right)\right)^{3}}+\|\mathbf{J}\|_{W^{2,1}\left(0, T ; H^{2}(\Omega)\right)^{3}}+\left\|\mathbf{J}_{\Gamma}\right\|_{W^{2,1}\left(0, T ; H^{3}(\Gamma)\right)^{3}}\right) . \tag{4.54}
\end{align*}
$$

For $t \in[0, T] \backslash I$, it suffices to prove the following Lemma 4.6.

Lemma 4.6 Suppose that $\mathbf{B} \in W^{2,1}\left(0, T ; H^{3}\left(\Omega_{r}\right)\right)^{3}$ and $\mathbf{E} \in W^{1,1}\left(0, T ; H^{3}\left(\Omega_{r}\right)\right)^{3}$, for $r=1,2$, is the true solution of (1.1)-(1.4), and that $\mathbf{J} \in W^{2,1}\left(0, T ; H^{2}(\Omega)\right)^{3}$ and $\mathbf{J}_{\Gamma} \in W^{2,1}\left(0, T ; H^{3}(\Gamma)\right)^{3}$. Let $E$ be the solution of (4.10)-(4.11) on uniform grid with $C\left(E-E_{e}\right)(t)=0$ for all $t_{1}<t<t_{2}$. Then

$$
\begin{align*}
& \max _{t_{1}<t<t_{2}}\left\|\left(E-E_{e}\right)(t)\right\|_{W^{\prime}} \\
\leq & K h^{2}\left(\sum_{r=1}^{2}\|\mathbf{B}\|_{W^{2,1}\left(0, T ; H^{3}\left(\Omega_{r}\right)\right)^{3}}+\sum_{r=1}^{2}\|\mathbf{E}\|_{W^{1,1}\left(0, T ; H^{3}\left(\Omega_{r}\right)\right)^{3}}\right.  \tag{4.55}\\
& \left.+\|\mathbf{J}\|_{W^{2,1}\left(0, T ; H^{2}(\Omega)\right)^{3}}+\left\|\mathbf{J}_{\Gamma}\right\|_{W^{2,1}\left(0, T ; H^{3}(\Gamma)\right)^{3}}\right)
\end{align*}
$$

Proof. For any $t \in\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right)$, since $C\left(E-E_{e}\right)(t)=0$, by Lemma 3.7, there exist $\phi \in \mathbb{R}^{L}$ such that

$$
D\left(E-E_{e}\right)=B_{1}^{\prime} \phi
$$

Then

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left(S^{\prime} \frac{d}{d t}\left(E-E_{e}\right), D\left(E-E_{e}\right)\right) & =\left(S^{\prime} \frac{d}{d t}\left(E-E_{e}\right), B_{1}^{\prime} \phi\right) \\
& =\left(\frac{d}{d t} \mathcal{D}^{\prime}\left(E-E_{e}\right), \phi\right) \quad \text { by }(3.18)
\end{aligned}
$$

By Theorem 5.3, we have

$$
\left(S^{\prime} \frac{d}{d t}\left(E-E_{e}\right), D\left(E-E_{e}\right)\right)=\left(\frac{d}{d t}\left(\tilde{\rho}-\mathcal{D}^{\prime} E_{e}\right), \phi\right)
$$

Now, we define a vector $E_{p} \in \mathbb{R}^{M_{1}}$ in the following fashion. For any primal edge with non-empty intersection with edges of $\Omega_{1}$ and normal to $\Gamma$,

$$
\left(E_{p}\right)_{j}:=\beta_{j}(\mathbf{E} \cdot \mathbf{n})\left(Q_{j}^{1}\right)+\left(1-\beta_{j}\right)(\mathbf{E} \cdot \mathbf{n})\left(Q_{j}^{2}\right),
$$

where $\mathbf{n}$ is the direction of the primal edge and $Q_{j}^{r}$ denotes the mid-points of the face $\kappa_{j}^{r}$, for $r=1,2$. Here we recall that $\kappa_{j}^{r}=\kappa_{j}^{\prime} \cap \Omega_{r}$. For a face in $\Omega_{2}$, we divide the face in the same way as its neighbouring face in $\Omega_{1}$. For the other primal edges,

$$
\left(E_{p}\right)_{j}:=(\mathbf{E} \cdot \mathbf{n})\left(P_{j}\right)
$$

where $P_{j}$ is the mid-point of the primal edge. So,

$$
\left(S^{\prime} \frac{d}{d t}\left(E-E_{e}\right), D\left(E-E_{e}\right)\right)=\left(\frac{d}{d t}\left(\tilde{\rho}-\mathcal{D}^{\prime} E_{p}\right), \phi\right)+\left(\frac{d}{d t} \mathcal{D}^{\prime}\left(E_{p}-E_{e}\right), \phi\right),
$$

and consequently,

$$
\left(S^{\prime} \frac{d}{d t}\left(E-E_{e}\right), D\left(E-E_{e}\right)\right)=\left(\frac{d}{d t}\left(\tilde{\rho}-\mathcal{D}^{\prime} E_{p}\right), \phi\right)+\left(S^{\prime}\left(\dot{E}_{p}-\dot{E}_{e}\right), D\left(E-E_{e}\right)\right)
$$

For any dual element $\tau_{j}^{\prime}$, we denote by $\Pi_{h} \mathbf{E}$ the standard finite element linear interpolation of the function $\mathbf{E}$ on $\tau_{j}^{\prime}$. The formula is the same as $\Pi_{h} \mathbf{B}$. For an interface dual element, since it has a non-empty intersection with both $\Omega_{1}$ and $\Omega_{2}$, we define $\Pi_{h} \mathbf{E}$ in each of the two parts of the dual element. For each non-interface dual element $\tau_{j}^{\prime}$,

$$
\tilde{\rho}_{j}=\int_{\tau_{j}^{\prime}} \rho d x=\int_{\tau_{j}^{\prime}} \operatorname{div}(\epsilon \mathbf{E}) d x
$$

We rewrite $\tilde{\rho}_{j}$ as

$$
\tilde{\rho}_{j}=\int_{\tau_{j}^{\prime}} \operatorname{div}\left(\epsilon\left(\mathbf{E}-\Pi_{h} \mathbf{E}\right)\right) d x+\int_{\tau_{j}^{\prime}} \operatorname{div}\left(\epsilon \Pi_{h} \mathbf{E}\right) d x
$$

and by the divergence theorem,

$$
\tilde{\rho}_{j}=\left(\mathcal{D}^{\prime}\left(E_{f}^{\prime}-\Pi_{h} E_{f}^{\prime}\right)\right)_{j}+\int_{\tau_{j}^{\prime}} \operatorname{div}\left(\epsilon \Pi_{h} \mathbf{E}\right) d x
$$

Now, for each interface dual element $\tau_{j}^{\prime}$,

$$
\tilde{\rho}_{j}=\int_{\tau_{j}^{\prime}} \rho d x+\int_{\tau_{j}^{\prime} \cap \Gamma} \rho_{\Gamma} d \sigma=\int_{\tau_{j}^{\prime}} \operatorname{div}(\epsilon \mathbf{E}) d x+\int_{\tau_{j}^{\prime} \cap \Gamma}[\epsilon \mathbf{E} \cdot \mathbf{m}] d \sigma .
$$

We rewrite it as

$$
\begin{aligned}
\tilde{\rho}_{j}= & \int_{\tau_{j}^{\prime}} \operatorname{div}\left(\epsilon\left(\mathbf{E}-\Pi_{h} \mathbf{E}\right)\right) d x+\int_{\tau_{j}^{\prime} \cap \Gamma}\left[\epsilon\left(\mathbf{E}-\Pi_{h} \mathbf{E}\right) \cdot \mathbf{m}\right] d \sigma \\
& +\int_{\tau_{j}^{\prime}} \operatorname{div}\left(\epsilon \Pi_{h} \mathbf{E}\right) d x+\int_{\tau_{j}^{\prime} \cap \Gamma}\left[\epsilon \Pi_{h} \mathbf{E} \cdot \mathbf{m}\right] d \sigma
\end{aligned}
$$

and by the divergence theorem,

$$
\tilde{\rho}_{j}=\left(\mathcal{D}^{\prime}\left(E_{f}^{\prime}-\Pi_{h} E_{f}^{\prime}\right)\right)_{j}+\int_{\tau_{j}^{\prime}} \operatorname{div}\left(\epsilon \Pi_{h} \mathbf{E}\right) d x+\int_{\tau_{j}^{\prime} \cap \Gamma}\left[\epsilon \Pi_{h} \mathbf{E} \cdot \mathbf{m}\right] d \sigma
$$

Hence, we obtain

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \left(S^{\prime} \frac{d}{d t}\left(E-E_{e}\right), D\left(E-E_{e}\right)\right) \\
= & \left(\frac{d}{d t} \mathcal{D}^{\prime}\left(E_{f}^{\prime}-\Pi_{h} E_{f}^{\prime}\right), \phi\right)+\left(S^{\prime}\left(\dot{E}_{p}-\dot{E}_{e}\right), D\left(E-E_{e}\right)\right)+\left(\frac{d R}{d t}, \phi\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

where

$$
R_{j}:=\int_{\tau_{j}^{\prime}} \operatorname{div}\left(\epsilon \Pi_{h} \mathbf{E}\right) d x+\int_{\tau_{j}^{\prime} \cap \Gamma}\left[\epsilon \Pi_{h} \mathbf{E} \cdot \mathbf{m}\right] d \sigma-\left(\mathcal{D}^{\prime} E_{p}\right)_{j} .
$$

Since $\Pi_{h} \mathrm{E}$ is a linear function in each dual element, by a direct computation, we have $R=0$. Finally, we obtain

$$
\frac{1}{2} \frac{d}{d t}\left\|E-E_{e}\right\|_{W^{\prime}}^{2}=\left(S^{\prime}\left(\dot{E}_{f}^{\prime}-\Pi_{h} \dot{E}_{f}^{\prime}\right), D\left(E-E_{e}\right)\right)+\left(S^{\prime}\left(\dot{E}_{p}-\dot{E}_{e}\right), D\left(E-E_{e}\right)\right)
$$

Integrating from $t_{1}$ to $t$, and by the Cauchy-Schwarz inequality, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \left\|\left(E-E_{e}\right)(t)\right\|_{W^{\prime}}^{2} \\
= & \left\|\left(E-E_{e}\right)\left(t_{1}\right)\right\|_{W^{\prime}}^{2}+2 \int_{t_{1}}^{t}\left\|\left(\dot{E}_{f}^{\prime}-\Pi_{h} \dot{E}_{f}^{\prime}\right)(s)\right\|_{W^{\prime}}\left\|\left(E-E_{e}\right)(s)\right\|_{W^{\prime}} d s \\
& +2 \int_{t_{1}}^{t}\left\|\left(\dot{E}_{p}-\dot{E}_{e}\right)(s)\right\|_{W^{\prime}}\left\|\left(E-E_{e}\right)(s)\right\|_{W^{\prime}} d s
\end{aligned}
$$

By (4.54), we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \left\|\left(E-E_{e}\right)\left(t_{1}\right)\right\|_{W^{\prime}} \\
\leq & K h^{2}\left(\sum_{r=1}^{2}\|\mathbf{B}\|_{W^{2,1}\left(0, T ; H^{3}\left(\Omega_{r}\right)\right)^{3}}+\|\mathbf{J}\|_{W^{2,1}\left(0, T ; H^{2}(\Omega)\right)^{3}}+\left\|\mathbf{J}_{\Gamma}\right\|_{W^{2,1}\left(0, T ; H^{3}(\Gamma)\right)^{3}}\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

For each non-interface dual face, the term $\dot{E}_{f}^{\prime}-\Pi_{h} \dot{E}_{f}^{\prime}$ defines a bounded linear functional vanishes for any linear functions, so

$$
\left|\left(\dot{E}_{f}^{\prime}-\Pi_{h} \dot{E}_{f}^{\prime}\right)_{j}\right| \leq K h^{\frac{1}{2}}|\dot{\mathbf{E}}|_{H^{2}\left(\tau_{i}^{\prime} \cup \tau_{k}^{\prime}\right)^{3}} .
$$

For each interface dual face $\kappa_{j}^{\prime}$, we have

$$
\left(\dot{E}_{f}^{\prime}-\Pi_{h} \dot{E}_{f}^{\prime}\right)_{j}=\beta_{j} \frac{1}{s_{j}^{1}} \int_{\kappa_{j}^{1}}\left(\dot{\mathbf{E}}-\Pi_{h} \dot{\mathbf{E}}\right) \cdot \mathbf{n} d \sigma+\left(1-\beta_{j}\right) \frac{1}{s_{j}^{2}} \int_{\kappa_{j}^{2}}\left(\dot{\mathbf{E}}-\Pi_{h} \dot{\mathbf{E}}\right) \cdot \mathbf{n} d \sigma .
$$

So, we have

$$
\left|\left(\dot{E}_{f}^{\prime}-\Pi_{h} \dot{E}_{f}^{\prime}\right)_{j}\right| \leq K h^{\frac{1}{2}} \sum_{r=1}^{2}|\dot{\mathbf{E}}|_{H^{2}\left(\left(\tau_{i}^{\prime} \cup \tau_{k}^{\prime}\right) \cap \Omega_{r}\right)^{3}}
$$

Consequently,

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left\|\dot{E}_{f}^{\prime}-\Pi_{h} \dot{E}_{f}^{\prime}\right\|_{W^{\prime}}^{2} & =\sum_{j=1}^{M_{1}} \bar{s}_{j}^{\prime} h_{j}\left|\left(\dot{E}_{f}^{\prime}-\Pi_{h} \dot{E}_{f}^{\prime}\right)_{j}\right|^{2} \\
& \leq K h^{4} \sum_{r=1}^{2} \sum_{j=1}^{M_{1}}|\dot{\mathbf{E}}|_{H^{2}\left(\left(\tau_{i}^{\prime} \cup \tau_{k}^{\prime}\right) \cap \Omega_{r}\right)^{3}}^{2} \\
& =K h^{4} \sum_{r=1}^{2}|\dot{\mathbf{E}}|_{H^{2}\left(\Omega_{r}\right)^{3}}^{2} .
\end{aligned}
$$

From the definition of $E_{p}$, for any primal edge $\sigma_{j}$ with non-empty intersection with edges of $\Omega_{1}$ and normal to $\Gamma$, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \left(\dot{E}_{p}-\dot{E}_{e}\right)_{j} \\
= & \beta_{j}(\dot{\mathbf{E}} \cdot \mathbf{n})\left(Q_{j}^{1}\right)+\left(1-\beta_{j}\right)(\dot{\mathbf{E}} \cdot \mathbf{n})\left(Q_{j}^{2}\right)-\frac{1}{h_{j}} \int_{\sigma_{j}} \dot{\mathbf{E}} \cdot \mathbf{n} d l \\
= & \beta_{j}\left((\dot{\mathbf{E}} \cdot \mathbf{n})\left(Q_{j}^{1}\right)-\frac{1}{h_{j}} \int_{\sigma_{j}} \dot{\mathbf{E}} \cdot \mathbf{n} d l\right)+\left(1-\beta_{j}\right)\left((\dot{\mathbf{E}} \cdot \mathbf{n})\left(Q_{j}^{2}\right)-\frac{1}{h_{j}} \int_{\sigma_{j}} \dot{\mathbf{E}} \cdot \mathbf{n} d l\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

Notice that

$$
\begin{aligned}
& (\dot{\mathbf{E}} \cdot \mathbf{n})\left(Q_{j}^{1}\right)-\frac{1}{h_{j}} \int_{\sigma_{j}} \dot{\mathbf{E}} \cdot \mathbf{n} d l \\
= & (\dot{\mathbf{E}} \cdot \mathbf{n})\left(Q_{j}^{1}\right)-(\dot{\mathbf{E}} \cdot \mathbf{n})\left(P_{j}\right)-\frac{1}{h_{j}} \int_{\sigma_{j}}\left(\dot{\mathbf{E}} \cdot \mathbf{n}-(\dot{\mathbf{E}} \cdot \mathbf{n})\left(P_{j}\right)\right) d l \\
\leq & K h\|\dot{\mathbf{E}}\|_{C^{1}\left(\Omega_{1}\right)^{3}} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Similarly, we have

$$
(\dot{\mathbf{E}} \cdot \mathbf{n})\left(Q_{j}^{2}\right)-\frac{1}{h_{j}} \int_{\sigma_{j}} \dot{\mathbf{E}} \cdot \mathbf{n} d l \leq K h\|\dot{\mathbf{E}}\|_{C^{1}\left(\Omega_{2}\right)^{3}} .
$$

Since the number of primal edges with non-empty intersection with edges of $\Omega_{1}$ and normal to $\Gamma$ is $O(N)$, we obtain

$$
\begin{aligned}
\sum_{\sigma_{j}} \bar{s}_{j}^{\prime} h_{j}\left|\left(\dot{E}_{p}-\dot{E}_{e}\right)_{j}\right|^{2} & \leq K h^{5} \sum_{r=1}^{2}\|\dot{\mathbf{E}}\|_{C^{1}\left(\Omega_{r}\right)^{3}} \sum_{\sigma_{j}} 1 \\
& \leq K h^{4} \sum_{r=1}^{2}\|\dot{\mathbf{E}}\|_{H^{3}\left(\Omega_{r}\right)^{3}}
\end{aligned}
$$

For the other components of $\dot{E}_{p}-\dot{E}_{e}$, by the definition of $E_{p}$, we have

$$
\left(\dot{E}_{p}-\dot{E}_{e}\right)_{j}=(\dot{\mathbf{E}} \cdot \mathbf{n})\left(P_{j}\right)-\frac{1}{h_{j}} \int_{\sigma_{j}} \dot{\mathbf{E}} \cdot \mathbf{n} d l .
$$

Since, $\left(\dot{E}_{p}-\dot{E}_{e}\right)_{j}$ defines a bounded linear functional which vanishes for any linear functions, by similar steps as above, we obtain

$$
\sum_{\sigma_{j}} \bar{s}_{j}^{\prime} h_{j}\left|\left(\dot{E}_{p}-\dot{E}_{e}\right)_{j}\right|^{2} \leq K h^{4} \sum_{r=1}^{2}|\dot{\mathbf{E}}|_{H^{2}\left(\Omega_{r}\right)^{3}}^{2}
$$

Consequently,

$$
\left\|\dot{E}_{p}-\dot{E}_{e}\right\|_{W^{\prime}} \leq K h^{2} \sum_{r=1}^{2}|\dot{\mathbf{E}}|_{H^{3}\left(\Omega_{r}\right)^{3}}^{2}
$$

Collecting the above results, we have proved the desired estimate.

We remark here that Theorem 4.6 shows our semi-discrete finite volume approximation of the Maxwell's equations is second order convergent for rectangular domains. Furthermore, the above estimates are optimal since the $W$ and $W^{\prime}$ norms are the discrete analog of $L^{2}$-norm.

## Chapter 5

## Fully Discretization of the Maxwell's Equations

In this chapter, a fully discretization of the Maxwell's equations, that is discretization in both space and time, will be presented. For the fully discrete finite volume approximation of Maxwell's equations, we will prove that the solution to this discrete approximation satisfies the divergence constraints in discrete sense. Furthermore, a convergence analysis will be given in both the following cases: first, the domains $\Omega$ and $\Omega_{1}$ are two polyhedra; second, the domains $\Omega$ and $\Omega_{1}$ are two cuboids. In the second case, we can prove that the convergence rate is one order higher, that is, it is second order convergent. Also, the convergence in time is second order for both cases.

### 5.1 Derivation

In this section, we will derive the fully discrete approximation of Maxwell's equations by our finite volume method. Our approach is to discretize the time derivatives in (4.10)-(4.11) by finite differences. Let us recall the definition of finite difference. For any smooth function $u(t)$, we can approximate its first order
derivative at a point $t$ by the following formula

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d u(t)}{d t} \approx \frac{u(t+\tau)-u(t-\tau)}{2 \tau} \tag{5.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

for small $\tau$. It is called the central difference approximation of first order derivatives. It can be shown, by using a Taylor expansion, that this approximation is second order.

Let $N_{T}$ be the number of subintervals of $[0, T]$ and $\Delta t$ be the length of each subinterval. Denote $t_{n}:=n \Delta t$, for $0 \leq n \leq N_{T}-1$. In our finite volume method, we approximate the true solution $\mathbf{E}(t)$ at times $t_{n}$ with the approximation represented by $E^{n}$ while the true solution $\mathbf{B}(t)$ at times $t_{n+\frac{1}{2}}$ with the approximation represented by $B^{n+\frac{1}{2}}$. This method is the so called leapfrog scheme. The initial condition $B^{\frac{1}{2}}$ is computed by using Taylor's expansion and the Maxwell's equations (1.1)-(1.2).

For (4.10), we apply the central difference approximation to the derivative in time at time $t=t_{n+\frac{1}{2}}$, then

$$
S^{\prime} \frac{E^{n+1}-E^{n}}{\Delta t}-C^{\prime} B^{n+\frac{1}{2}}=\frac{1}{\Delta t} \int_{n \Delta t}^{(n+1) \Delta t} \tilde{J} d t
$$

where we use the average value of $\tilde{J}$ on the subinterval $[n \Delta t,(n+1) \Delta t]$ to approximate the value of $\tilde{J}$ at $t=t_{n+\frac{1}{2}}$. Clearly, this approximation is second order accurate. Similarly, for (4.11), we apply the central difference approximation to the time derivative at time $t=t_{n+1}$, so we get

$$
S \frac{B^{n+\frac{3}{2}}-B^{n+\frac{1}{2}}}{\Delta t}+C E^{n+1}=0
$$

Now, we have the fully discrete scheme: Given $\left(E^{n}, B^{n+\frac{1}{2}}\right)_{0 \leq n \leq N_{T}-1}$, the next approximation ( $E^{n+1}, B^{n+\frac{3}{2}}$ ) is calculated by solving the following equations

$$
\begin{align*}
S^{\prime}\left(E^{n+1}-E^{n}\right)-\Delta t C^{\prime} B^{n+\frac{1}{2}} & =\tilde{J}^{n+\frac{1}{2}}  \tag{5.2}\\
S\left(B^{n+\frac{3}{2}}-B^{n+\frac{1}{2}}\right)+\Delta t C E^{n+1} & =0 \tag{5.3}
\end{align*}
$$

where

$$
\tilde{J}^{n+\frac{1}{2}}:=\int_{n \Delta t}^{(n+1) \Delta t} \tilde{J} d t
$$

We also supplement (5.2)-(5.3) with an initial condition

$$
\begin{equation*}
E^{0}=E_{e}(0), \quad B^{\frac{1}{2}}=B_{f}\left(t_{\frac{1}{2}}\right) . \tag{5.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

Theorem 5.1 The fully discrete scheme (5.2)-(5.3) has a unique solution.

Proof. The reason for the uniqueness follows from the fact that (5.2)-(5.3) is an explicit finite difference method for solving system of linear first order ordinary differential equations.

### 5.2 Consistency theory

As explained in last chapter, it is important to know whether the solution of the fully discrete approximation of Maxwell's equations satisfies the divergence constraints in some discrete sense. Otherwise, the solution is not representing true phenomenon since both the magnetic and electric fields must satisfy the divergence constraints.

In the following theorem, we have shown that the solution $B^{n+\frac{1}{2}}$ to (5.2)-(5.3) satisfies the divergence constraint in discrete level.

Theorem 5.2 Let $B^{n+\frac{1}{2}}$, for $0 \leq n \leq N_{T}-1$, be the solution to the fully discrete scheme (5.2)-(5.3), then $B^{n+\frac{1}{2}}$ is divergence-free in the discrete level, i.e.,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{D} B^{n+\frac{1}{2}}=0, \quad 0 \leq n \leq N_{T}-1 \tag{5.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. By Lemma 3.6 and (5.3), we have

$$
\mathcal{D}\left(B^{n+\frac{3}{2}}-B^{n+\frac{1}{2}}\right)=B_{1}^{T} S\left(B^{n+\frac{3}{2}}-B^{n+\frac{1}{2}}\right)=-\Delta t B_{1}^{T} C E^{n+1}=0
$$

Taking the divergence in both sides of (1.2), we obtain

$$
\frac{\partial}{\partial t} \operatorname{div}(\mu \mathbf{H})=0
$$

that implies $\operatorname{div}(\mu \mathbf{H})=0$ at time $t=\frac{1}{2} \Delta t$ by noting (1.7). Integrating this equation over a primal element $\tau_{i}$ and using the Stokes' theorem lead to (at $\left.t=\frac{1}{2} \Delta t\right)$

$$
\sum_{\kappa_{j} \in \partial \tau_{i}} \int_{\kappa_{j}} \mathbf{B} \cdot \mathbf{n}_{j} d \sigma=0
$$

By the definition of $B_{f}$, this can be written as

$$
\left(\mathcal{D} B_{f}^{\frac{1}{2}}\right)_{i}=0
$$

for any $i$. So $\mathcal{D} B_{f}^{\frac{1}{2}}=0$. Using $B^{\frac{1}{2}}=B_{f}^{\frac{1}{2}}$, we conclude that

$$
\mathcal{D} B^{n+\frac{1}{2}}=0, \quad 0 \leq n \leq N_{T}-1 .
$$

The next theorem shows how the solution $E^{n}$ to (5.2)-(5.3) satisfies the divergence constraint in discrete level.

Theorem 5.3 Let $E^{n}, 0 \leq n \leq N_{T}-1$, be the solution to the fully discrete scheme (5.2)-(5.3). Then we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{D}^{\prime} E^{n}=\tilde{\rho}^{n}+\mathcal{D}^{\prime}\left(E_{e}-E_{f}^{\prime}\right)(0), \quad 0 \leq n \leq N_{T}-1 \tag{5.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\tilde{\rho}$ is a vector in $\mathbb{R}^{L}$ with

$$
\begin{equation*}
\tilde{\rho}_{j}^{n}:=\int_{\tau_{j}^{\prime}} \rho\left(x, t_{n}\right) d x+\int_{\tau_{j}^{\prime} \cap \Gamma} \rho_{\Gamma}\left(x, t_{n}\right) d \sigma . \tag{5.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. By Lemma 3.6 and (5.2), we have for $0 \leq n \leq N_{T}-2$ that

$$
\begin{aligned}
\mathcal{D}^{\prime}\left(E^{n+1}-E^{n}\right) & =\left(B_{1}^{\prime}\right)^{T} S^{\prime}\left(E^{n+1}-E^{n}\right)=\Delta t\left(B_{1}^{\prime}\right)^{T} C^{\prime} B^{n+\frac{1}{2}}+\left(B_{1}^{\prime}\right)^{T} \tilde{J}^{n+\frac{1}{2}} \\
& =\left(B_{1}^{\prime}\right)^{T} \tilde{J}^{n+\frac{1}{2}}=\int_{t_{n}}^{t_{n+1}}\left(B_{1}^{\prime}\right)^{T} \tilde{J} d t .
\end{aligned}
$$

Summing up all these equations over $n$, we obtain

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{D}^{\prime} E^{n}=\mathcal{D}^{\prime} E^{0}+\int_{0}^{t_{n}}\left(B_{1}^{\prime}\right)^{T} \tilde{J} d t, \quad 0 \leq n \leq N_{T}-1 \tag{5.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

Integrating the initial condition $\operatorname{div}(\epsilon \mathbf{E}(x, 0))=\rho(x, 0)$ over a strictly interior dual element $\tau_{i}^{\prime}$, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{\kappa_{r}^{\prime} \in \partial \tau_{i}^{\prime}} \int_{\kappa_{r}^{\prime}} \epsilon \mathbf{E}(x, 0) \cdot \mathbf{n}_{r} d \sigma=\int_{\tau_{i}^{\prime}} \rho(x, 0) d x \tag{5.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

which, by the definition of the face average, can be written as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(\mathcal{D}^{\prime}\left(E_{f}^{\prime}\right)(0)\right)_{i}=\int_{\tau_{i}^{\prime}} \rho(x, 0) d x \tag{5.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

We know $E^{0}=E_{e}(0)$ for all primal edges corresponding to the dual faces of $\tau_{i}^{\prime}$, then (5.10) is equivalent to

$$
\left(\mathcal{D}^{\prime} E^{0}\right)_{i}=\int_{\tau_{i}^{\prime}} \rho(x, 0) d x+e_{i}
$$

where

$$
e_{i}:=\left(\mathcal{D}^{\prime}\left(E_{e}-E_{f}^{\prime}\right)(0)\right)_{i}
$$

For an interface dual element $\tau_{j}^{\prime}$, that is $\tau_{j}^{\prime} \cap \Gamma \neq \phi$, we can write

$$
\int_{\tau_{i}^{\prime}} \operatorname{div}(\epsilon \mathbf{E}(x, 0)) d x=\sum_{k=1}^{2} \int_{\tau_{j}^{\prime} \cap \Omega_{k}} \operatorname{div}(\epsilon \mathbf{E}(x, 0)) d x=\int_{\tau_{j}^{\prime}} \rho(x, 0) d x .
$$

By the divergence theorem and the jump condition $[\epsilon \mathbf{E} \cdot \mathbf{m}]=\rho_{\Gamma}$ on $\Gamma$, we obtain

$$
\left(\mathcal{D}^{\prime} E^{0}\right)_{j}=\int_{\tau_{j}^{\prime}} \rho(x, 0) d x+\int_{\tau_{j}^{\prime} \cap \Gamma} \rho_{\Gamma}(x, 0) d \sigma+e_{j}
$$

where

$$
\begin{equation*}
e_{j}:=\left(\mathcal{D}^{\prime}\left(E_{e}-E_{f}^{\prime}\right)(0)\right)_{j} \tag{5.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

By the continuity equation (1.9), for any interface dual element $\tau_{j}^{\prime}$, we have

$$
\frac{\partial}{\partial t} \int_{\tau_{j}^{\prime}} \rho d x=\int_{\tau_{j}^{\prime}} \operatorname{div} \mathbf{J} d x=\sum_{k=1}^{2} \int_{\tau_{j}^{\prime} \cap \Omega_{k}} \operatorname{div} \mathbf{J} d x
$$

Applying the divergence theorem,

$$
\frac{\partial}{\partial t} \int_{\tau_{j}^{\prime}} \rho d x=\sum_{\kappa_{r}^{\prime} \in \partial \tau_{j}^{\prime}} \int_{\kappa_{r}^{\prime}} \mathbf{J} \cdot \mathbf{n}_{r} d \sigma-\int_{\tau_{j}^{\prime} \cap \Gamma}[\mathbf{J} \cdot \mathbf{m}] d \sigma
$$

From equation (1.1), we see

$$
\begin{aligned}
\int_{\tau_{j}^{\prime} \cap \Gamma}[\mathbf{J} \cdot \mathbf{m}] d \sigma & =-\int_{\tau_{j}^{\prime} \cap \Gamma}[\operatorname{curl} \mathbf{H} \cdot \mathbf{m}] d \sigma+\frac{\partial}{\partial t} \int_{\tau_{j}^{\prime} \cap \Gamma}[\epsilon \mathbf{E} \cdot \mathbf{m}] d \sigma \\
& =-\int_{\tau_{j}^{\prime} \cap \Gamma}[\operatorname{curl} \mathbf{H} \cdot \mathbf{m}] d \sigma+\frac{\partial}{\partial t} \int_{\tau_{j}^{\prime} \cap \Gamma} \rho_{\Gamma} d \sigma
\end{aligned}
$$

From figure 1 and the equations (4.4) and (4.5),

$$
\int_{\tau_{j}^{\prime} \cap \Gamma}[\operatorname{curl} \mathbf{H} \cdot \mathbf{m}] d \sigma=\sum_{\gamma_{r}^{\prime} \in \partial\left(\tau_{j}^{\prime} \cap \Gamma\right)} \int_{\gamma_{r}^{\prime}}\left[\mathbf{H} \cdot \mathbf{t}_{r}\right] d l=\sum_{\gamma_{r}^{\prime} \in \partial\left(\tau_{j}^{\prime} \cap \Gamma\right)} \int_{\gamma_{r}^{\prime}} \mathbf{J}_{\Gamma} \cdot \mathbf{n}_{r} d \sigma .
$$

Combining the above results, we have

$$
\frac{\partial}{\partial t} \int_{\tau_{j}^{\prime}} \rho d x=\left(\left(B_{1}^{\prime}\right)^{T} \tilde{J}\right)_{j}-\frac{\partial}{\partial t} \int_{\tau_{j}^{\prime} \cap \Gamma} \rho_{\Gamma} d \sigma
$$

Integrating both sides over $\left[0, t_{n}\right]$ gives

$$
\begin{aligned}
\int_{\tau_{j}^{\prime}} \rho\left(x, t_{n}\right) d x & -\int_{\tau_{j}^{\prime}} \rho(x, 0) d x \\
& =\int_{0}^{t_{n}}\left(\left(B^{\prime}\right)^{T} \tilde{J}\right)_{j} d t+\int_{\tau_{j}^{\prime} \cap \Gamma} \rho_{\Gamma}(x, 0) d \sigma-\int_{\tau_{j}^{\prime} \cap \Gamma} \rho_{\Gamma}\left(x, t_{n}\right) d \sigma
\end{aligned}
$$

By a similiar argument, we can derive the same result for any strictly interior dual elements. Hence, we have proved (5.6).

We remark that the last term in (5.7) vanishes for any strictly interior dual element $\tau_{i}^{\prime}$. But for any interface dual element $\tau_{j}^{\prime}$, we can integrate both sides of (1.3) over $\tau_{j}^{\prime}$ and apply the divergence theorem to obtain

$$
\sum_{\kappa_{r}^{\prime} \in \partial \tau_{j}^{\prime}} \int_{\kappa_{r}^{\prime}} \epsilon \mathbf{E} \cdot \mathbf{n}_{r} d \sigma=\int_{\tau_{j}^{\prime}} \rho d x+\int_{\tau_{j}^{\prime} \cap \Gamma} \rho_{\Gamma} d \sigma
$$

Thus (5.6) is a fully discrete approximation of this integral version of the divergence constraint (1.3).

### 5.3 Convergence theory

In this section, we develop the convergence theory for the fully discrete approximation (5.2)-(5.3) of the Maxwell's equations. We divide this section into two parts. The first part deals with the case when both $\Omega$ and $\Omega_{1}$ are polydedral domains. It can be shown that the convergence rate is $O(h)$. The second part deals with the case when both $\Omega$ and $\Omega_{1}$ are rectangular domains and shows that the convergence rate is one order higher, that is, $O\left(h^{2}\right)$.

### 5.3.1 Polyhedral domain

Before the development of the convergence theory of our fully discrete finite volume approximation, we need the following technical lemma which is in fact the Bramble-Hilbert lemma but with a sharper estimate of the constant.

Lemma 5.1 Suppose that $f$ is a bounded linear functional on the space $W^{1,1}(0, \Delta t)$ and $f(c)=0$ for any constant functions $c \in \mathbb{R}^{1}$. Then there exist a constant $K$ independent of $\Delta t$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
|f(v)| \leq K|v|_{W^{1,1}(0, \Delta t)} . \tag{5.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. Define a linear transformation $\hat{T}:[0, \Delta t] \rightarrow[0,1]$ by $\hat{t}=(\Delta t)^{-1} t$. Denote $\hat{v}$ be the transformed function, that is, $\hat{v}(\hat{t})=\hat{v}\left((\Delta t)^{-1} t\right)=v(t)$. Then, by the Bramble-Hilbert lemma, there exist a generic constant $K$ such that

$$
|f(\hat{v})| \leq K|\hat{v}|_{W^{1,1}(0,1)} .
$$

Notice that

$$
\begin{aligned}
|\hat{v}|_{W^{1,1}(0,1)} & =\int_{0}^{1}\left|\frac{d \hat{v}}{d \hat{t}}\right| d \hat{t}, \\
& =\int_{0}^{\Delta t}\left|\frac{d v}{d t} \frac{d t}{d \hat{t}}\right|(\Delta t)^{-1} d t,
\end{aligned}
$$

where in the last step, we have applied the inverse transformation $\hat{T}^{-1}$ to the integral. So, we obtain

$$
|\hat{v}|_{W^{1,1}(0,1)}=\int_{0}^{\Delta t}\left|\frac{d v}{d t}\right| d t
$$

which implies the lemma.

We remark here that the above lemma can be generalized to the case that the space $W^{1,1}(0, \Delta t)$ is replaced by $W^{1,1}(n \Delta t,(n+1) \Delta t)$.

We are now in a position to give the convergence analysis for the fully discrete finite volume approximation. From (5.2)-(5.3), we obtain

$$
\begin{align*}
S^{\prime}\left(\left(E^{n+1}-E_{f}^{\prime n+1}\right)-\left(E^{n}-E_{f}^{\prime n}\right)\right) & =\Delta t C^{\prime}\left(B^{n+\frac{1}{2}}-B_{e}^{\prime n+\frac{1}{2}}\right)+\mathcal{M}^{n}  \tag{5.13}\\
S\left(\left(B^{n+\frac{3}{2}}-B_{f}^{n+\frac{3}{2}}\right)-\left(B^{n+\frac{1}{2}}-B_{f}^{n+\frac{1}{2}}\right)\right) & =-\Delta t C\left(E^{n+1}-E_{e}^{n+1}\right)+\mathcal{N}^{n} \tag{5.14}
\end{align*}
$$

where, by a direct computation, we have

$$
\begin{align*}
\mathcal{M}^{n} & :=\tilde{J}^{n+\frac{1}{2}}-S^{\prime}\left(E_{f}^{\prime n+1}-E_{f}^{\prime n}\right)+\Delta t C^{\prime} B_{e}^{\prime n+\frac{1}{2}}  \tag{5.15}\\
\mathcal{N}^{n} & :=-S\left(B_{f}^{n+\frac{3}{2}}-B_{f}^{n+\frac{1}{2}}\right)-\Delta t C E_{e}^{n+1} \tag{5.16}
\end{align*}
$$

Now, multiplying (5.13) by $D\left(\left(E^{n}-E_{e}^{n}\right)+\left(E^{n+1}-E_{e}^{n+1}\right)\right)$ and (5.14) by $D^{\prime}\left(\left(B^{n+\frac{1}{2}}-\right.\right.$ $\left.\left.B_{e}^{\prime n+\frac{1}{2}}\right)+\left(B^{n+\frac{3}{2}}-B_{e}^{\prime n+\frac{3}{2}}\right)\right)$, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \left(S^{\prime}\left(\left(E^{n+1}-E_{f}^{\prime n+1}\right)-\left(E^{n}-E_{f}^{\prime n}\right)\right), D\left(\left(E^{n}-E_{e}^{n}\right)+\left(E^{n+1}-E_{e}^{n+1}\right)\right)\right) \\
& +\left(S\left(\left(B^{n+\frac{3}{2}}-B_{f}^{n+\frac{3}{2}}\right)-\left(B^{n+\frac{1}{2}}-B_{f}^{n+\frac{1}{2}}\right)\right), D^{\prime}\left(\left(B^{n+\frac{1}{2}}-B_{e}^{\prime n+\frac{1}{2}}\right)+\left(B^{n+\frac{3}{2}}-B_{e}^{\prime n+\frac{3}{2}}\right)\right)\right) \\
= & \Delta t\left(C^{\prime}\left(B^{n+\frac{1}{2}}-B_{e}^{\prime n+\frac{1}{2}}\right), D\left(\left(E^{n}-E_{e}^{n}\right)+\left(E^{n+1}-E_{e}^{n+1}\right)\right)\right) \\
& -\Delta t\left(C\left(E^{n+1}-E_{e}^{n+1}\right), D^{\prime}\left(\left(B^{n+\frac{1}{2}}-B_{e}^{\prime n+\frac{1}{2}}\right)+\left(B^{n+\frac{3}{2}}-B_{e}^{\prime n+\frac{3}{2}}\right)\right)\right) \\
& +\left(\mathcal{M}^{n}, D\left(\left(E^{n}-E_{e}^{n}\right)+\left(E^{n+1}-E_{e}^{n+1}\right)\right)\right) \\
& +\left(\mathcal{N}^{n}, D^{\prime}\left(\left(B^{n+\frac{1}{2}}-B_{e}^{\prime n+\frac{1}{2}}\right)+\left(B^{n+\frac{3}{2}}-B_{e}^{\prime n+\frac{3}{2}}\right)\right)\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

Adding all the equations from $n=0,1, \ldots, N_{T}-1$, we obtain

$$
\begin{align*}
& \left\|E^{N_{T}-1}-E_{e}^{N_{T}-1}\right\|_{W^{\prime}}^{2}+\left\|B^{N_{T}-\frac{1}{2}}-B_{e}^{\prime N_{T}-\frac{1}{2}}\right\|_{W}^{2} \\
= & \Delta t\left(C^{\prime}\left(B^{N_{T}-\frac{1}{2}}-B_{e}^{N_{T}-\frac{1}{2}}\right), D\left(E^{N_{T}-1}-E_{e}^{N_{T}-1}\right)\right) \\
& +\sum_{i=0}^{N_{T}-1}\left(\left(E_{f}^{\prime i+1}-E_{e}^{i+1}\right)-\left(E_{f}^{\prime i}-E_{e}^{i}\right),\left(E^{i}-E_{e}^{i}\right)+\left(E^{i+1}-E_{e}^{i+1}\right)\right)_{W^{\prime}} \\
& +\sum_{i=0}^{N_{T}-2}\left(\left(B_{f}^{i+\frac{3}{2}}-B_{e}^{\prime i+\frac{3}{2}}\right)-\left(B_{f}^{i+\frac{1}{2}}-B_{e}^{\prime i+\frac{1}{2}}\right),\left(B^{i+\frac{1}{2}}-B_{e}^{\prime i+\frac{1}{2}}\right)+\left(B^{i+\frac{3}{2}}-B_{e}^{\prime i+\frac{3}{2}}\right)\right)_{W} \\
& +\mathcal{A}_{1}+\mathcal{A}_{2} \tag{5.17}
\end{align*}
$$

where

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \mathcal{A}_{1}:=\sum_{i=0}^{N_{T}-1}\left(\mathcal{M}^{i}, D\left(\left(E^{i}-E_{e}^{i}\right)+\left(E^{i+1}-E_{e}^{i+1}\right)\right)\right. \\
& \left.\mathcal{A}_{2}:=\sum_{i=0}^{N_{T}-2}\left(\mathcal{N}^{i}, D^{\prime}\left(B^{i+\frac{1}{2}}-B_{e}^{\prime i+\frac{1}{2}}\right)+\left(B^{i+\frac{3}{2}}-B_{e}^{i+\frac{3}{2}}\right)\right)\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

We give the error estimate of the fully discrete scheme in the following theorem.

Theorem 5.4 Assume that $(\mathbf{E}, \mathbf{B}) \in\left(H^{2}\left(0, T ; W^{1, p}\left(\Omega_{i}\right)\right)^{3}\right)^{2}$, for $i=1,2$ and $p>2$, satisfies (1.1)-(1.4) and $\mathbf{J}_{\Gamma} \in H^{2}\left(0, T ; W^{1, p}(\Gamma)\right)^{3}$. Let $\left(E^{n}, B^{n+\frac{1}{2}}\right), 0 \leq$ $n \leq N_{T}-1$, be the solution of (5.2)-(5.3) on non-uniform grids. Then, under the stability condition

$$
\begin{equation*}
c_{m} \Delta t<\frac{\min \left(h_{i j}\right)}{\sqrt{M_{3}} M_{2}^{\frac{3}{2}}} \tag{5.18}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $M_{2}$ is the maximum of ratios of the maximum to minimum edge lengths over the union of adjacent elements, $M_{3}$ is the maximum number of dual edge over all dual faces, and

$$
c_{m}^{2}:=\frac{1}{\min \left(\epsilon_{1}, \epsilon_{2}\right) \min \left(\mu_{1}, \mu_{2}\right)},
$$

we have

$$
\begin{align*}
\max _{0 \leq i \leq N_{T}-1} & \left(\left\|E^{i}-E_{e}^{i}\right\|_{W^{\prime}}+\left\|B^{i+\frac{1}{2}}-B_{e}^{i+\frac{1}{2}}\right\|_{W}\right) \\
& \leq K h\left(\left|\mathbf{J}_{\Gamma}\right|_{H^{2}\left(0, T ; W^{1, p}(\Gamma)^{3}\right)}+\sum_{r=1}^{2}\|(\mathbf{E}, \mathbf{B})\|_{H^{2}\left(0, T ; W^{1, p}\left(\Omega_{i}\right)^{3}\right)^{2}}\right) . \tag{5.19}
\end{align*}
$$

Proof. We consider the right hand side of (5.17). The proof consists of four parts.
(i) Firstly, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \Delta t\left(C^{\prime}\left(B^{N_{T}-\frac{1}{2}}-B_{e}^{\prime N_{T}-\frac{1}{2}}\right), D\left(E^{N_{T}-1}-E_{e}^{N_{T}-1}\right)\right) \\
= & \Delta t\left(C^{\prime}\left(S D^{\prime}\right)^{-\frac{1}{2}}\left(\left(S D^{\prime}\right)^{\frac{1}{2}}\left(B^{N_{T}-\frac{1}{2}}-B_{e}^{\prime N_{T}-\frac{1}{2}}\right)\right),\left(D S^{\prime-1}\right)^{\frac{1}{2}}\left(\left(D S^{\prime}\right)^{\frac{1}{2}}\left(E^{N_{T}-1}-E_{e}^{N_{T}-1}\right)\right)\right. \\
\leq & \Delta t\left\|\left(D S^{\prime-1}\right)^{\frac{1}{2}} C^{\prime}\left(S D^{\prime}\right)^{-\frac{1}{2}}\right\|_{2}\left\|B^{N_{T}-\frac{1}{2}}-B_{e}^{\prime N_{T}-\frac{1}{2}}\right\|_{W}\left\|E^{N_{T}-1}-E_{e}^{N_{T}-1}\right\|_{W^{\prime}} .
\end{aligned}
$$

From elementary linear algebra, we know that $\left\|\left(D S^{\prime-1}\right)^{\frac{1}{2}} C^{\prime}\left(S D^{\prime}\right)^{-\frac{1}{2}}\right\|_{2}$ is the largest singular value of the matrix $\left(D S^{\prime-1}\right)^{\frac{1}{2}} C^{\prime}\left(S D^{\prime}\right)^{-\frac{1}{2}}$. By the Gerschgorin's theorem,

$$
\left\|\left(D S^{\prime-1}\right)^{\frac{1}{2}} C^{\prime}\left(S D^{\prime}\right)^{-\frac{1}{2}}\right\|_{2} \leq \frac{2 \sqrt{M_{3}}}{\min \left(\epsilon_{1}, \epsilon_{2}\right)^{\frac{1}{2}} \min \left(\mu_{1}, \mu_{2}\right)^{\frac{1}{2}}} \max \left(\frac{\max _{i j}\left(h_{i j}\right)^{\frac{3}{2}}}{\min _{i j}\left(h_{i j}\right)^{\frac{5}{2}}}\right)
$$

where $\max _{i j}$ and $\min _{i j}$ are taken over the union of adjacent elements. With the definitions of $c_{m}, M_{2}$ and $M_{3}$, we obtain

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \Delta t\left(C^{\prime}\left(B^{N_{T}-\frac{1}{2}}-B_{e}^{\prime N_{T}-\frac{1}{2}}\right), D\left(E^{N_{T}-1}-E_{e}^{N_{T}-1}\right)\right) \\
\leq & \Delta t c_{m} \frac{2 \sqrt{M_{3}} M_{2}^{\frac{3}{2}}}{\min \left(h_{i j}\right)}\left\|B^{N_{T}-\frac{1}{2}}-B_{e}^{\prime N_{T}-\frac{1}{2}}\right\|_{W}\left\|E^{N_{T}-1}-E_{e}^{N_{T}-1}\right\|_{W^{\prime}} \\
\leq & c_{m} \Delta t \frac{\sqrt{M_{3}} M_{2}^{\frac{3}{2}}}{\min \left(h_{i j}\right)}\left(\left\|B^{N_{T}-\frac{1}{2}}-B_{e}^{\prime N_{T}-\frac{1}{2}}\right\|_{W}^{2}+\left\|E^{N_{T}-1}-E_{e}^{N_{T}-1}\right\|_{W^{\prime}}^{2}\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

(ii) By the definition of integral, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left|\left(E_{f}^{\prime i+1}-E_{e}^{i+1}\right)-\left(E_{f}^{\prime i}-E_{e}^{i}\right)\right| & =\left|\int_{i \Delta t}^{(i+1) \Delta t} \dot{E}_{f}^{\prime}-\dot{E}_{e} d t\right| \\
& \leq \int_{i \Delta t}^{(i+1) \Delta t}\left|\dot{E}_{f}^{\prime}-\dot{E}_{e}\right| d t
\end{aligned}
$$

Then

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left\|\left(E_{f}^{\prime i+1}-E_{e}^{i+1}\right)-\left(E_{f}^{\prime i}-E_{e}^{i}\right)\right\|_{W^{\prime}}^{2} & =\sum_{j=1}^{M_{1}} \bar{s}_{j}^{\prime} h_{j}\left|\left(E_{f}^{\prime i+1}-E_{e}^{i+1}\right)_{j}-\left(E_{f}^{\prime i}-E_{e}^{i}\right)_{j}\right|^{2} \\
& \leq \sum_{j=1}^{M_{1}} \bar{s}_{j}^{\prime} h_{j}\left(\int_{i \Delta t}^{(i+1) \Delta t}\left|\left(\dot{E}_{f}^{\prime}-\dot{E}_{e}\right)_{j}\right| d t\right)^{2} \\
& \leq \Delta t \int_{i \Delta t}^{(i+1) \Delta t} \sum_{j=1}^{M_{1}} \bar{s}_{j}^{\prime} h_{j}\left|\left(\dot{E}_{f}^{\prime}-\dot{E}_{e}\right)_{j}\right|^{2} d t \\
& =\Delta t \int_{i \Delta t}^{(i+1) \Delta t}\left\|\dot{E}_{f}^{\prime}-\dot{E}_{e}\right\|_{W^{\prime}}^{2} d t
\end{aligned}
$$

By (4.29), we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left\|\left(E_{f}^{\prime i+1}-E_{e}^{i+1}\right)-\left(E_{f}^{\prime i}-E_{e}^{i}\right)\right\|_{W^{\prime}}^{2} & \leq K h^{2} \Delta t \int_{i \Delta t}^{(i+1) \Delta t} \sum_{r=1}^{2}|\dot{\mathbf{E}}(t)|_{W^{1, p}\left(\Omega_{r}\right)^{3}}^{2} d t \\
& \leq K h^{2} \Delta t \sum_{r=1}^{2}\|\dot{\mathbf{E}}\|_{L^{2}\left(i \Delta t,(i+1) \Delta t ; W^{1, p}\left(\Omega_{r}\right)\right)^{3}}^{2}
\end{aligned}
$$

Similarly, by (4.30), we have

$$
\left\|\left(B_{f}^{i+\frac{3}{2}}-B_{e}^{\prime i+\frac{3}{2}}\right)-\left(B_{f}^{i+\frac{1}{2}}-B_{e}^{\prime i+\frac{1}{2}}\right)\right\|_{W}^{2} \leq K h^{2} \Delta t \sum_{r=1}^{2}\|\dot{\mathbf{B}}\|_{L^{2}\left(\left(i+\frac{1}{2}\right) \Delta t,\left(i+\frac{3}{2}\right) \Delta t ; W^{1, p}\left(\Omega_{r}\right)\right)^{3}}^{2} .
$$

(iii) From (5.16),

$$
\begin{aligned}
\mathcal{N}^{i} & =-\int_{\left(i+\frac{1}{2}\right) \Delta t}^{\left(i+\frac{3}{2}\right) \Delta t}\left(S \dot{B}_{f}\right) d t-\Delta t C E_{e}^{i+1} \\
& =\int_{\left(i+\frac{1}{2}\right) \Delta t}^{\left(i+\frac{3}{2}\right) \Delta t}\left(C E_{e}\right) d t-\Delta t C E_{e}^{i+1}
\end{aligned}
$$

Clearly $\mathcal{N}_{l}^{i}$, the $l$-th component of $\mathcal{N}^{i}$, is a bounded linear functional with variable $\left(C E_{e}\right)_{l}$ and $\mathcal{N}_{l}^{i}=0$ for constant $\left(C E_{e}\right)_{l}$ in time, by Lemma 5.1 , we have

$$
\left|\mathcal{N}_{l}^{i}\right| \leq K \Delta t\left\|C \dot{E}_{e}\right\|_{L^{1}\left(\left(i+\frac{1}{2}\right) \Delta t,\left(i+\frac{3}{2}\right) \Delta t\right)} .
$$

Notice that $\left(C \dot{E}_{e}\right)_{l}$ is a bounded linear functional with variable $\dot{\mathbf{E}}$ and vanishes for any constant functions in the union of two adjacent polyhedra. By the Bramble-

Hilbert lemma and a standand rescale change argument, we obtain

$$
\left|\left(C \dot{E}_{e}\right)_{l}\right| \leq K h^{2-\frac{3}{p}}|\dot{\mathbf{E}}|_{\left(W^{1, p}\left(\tau_{j} \cup \tau_{k}\right)\right)^{3}},
$$

where $\tau_{j}$ and $\tau_{k}$ are two primal elements sharing the same face $\kappa_{l}$. Combining the results,

$$
\left|\mathcal{N}_{l}^{i}\right| \leq K h^{2-\frac{3}{p}} \Delta t \int_{\left(i+\frac{1}{2}\right) \Delta t}^{\left(i+\frac{3}{2}\right) \Delta t}|\dot{\mathbf{E}}|_{\left(W^{1, p}\left(\tau_{j} \cup \tau_{k}\right)\right)^{3}} d t .
$$

By the Cauchy-Schwarz's inequality, we obtain

$$
\left|\mathcal{N}_{l}^{i}\right|^{2} \leq K h^{4-\frac{6}{p}}(\Delta t)^{3} \int_{\left(i+\frac{1}{2}\right) \Delta t}^{\left(i+\frac{3}{2}\right) \Delta t}|\dot{\mathbf{E}}|_{\left(W^{1, p}\left(\tau_{j} \cup \tau_{k}\right)\right)^{3}}^{2} d t .
$$

Hence

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left\|S^{-1} \mathcal{N}^{i}\right\|_{W}^{2} & =\sum_{l=1}^{F_{1}} s_{l} \bar{h}_{l}^{\prime}\left(s_{l}\right)^{-2}\left|\mathcal{N}_{l}^{i}\right|^{2} \\
& \leq K h^{3-\frac{6}{p}}(\Delta t)^{3} \int_{\left(i+\frac{1}{2}\right) \Delta t}^{\left(i+\frac{3}{2}\right) \Delta t} \sum_{l=1}^{F_{1}}|\dot{\mathbf{E}}|_{\left(W^{1, p}\left(\tau_{j} \cup \tau_{k}\right)\right)^{3}}^{2} d t \\
& \leq K h^{2} \Delta t \sum_{r=1}^{2}\|\mathbf{E}\|_{H^{1}\left(\left(i+\frac{1}{2}\right) \Delta t,\left(i+\frac{3}{2}\right) \Delta t ; W^{1, p}\left(\Omega_{r}\right)\right)^{3}}^{2}
\end{aligned}
$$

where the last line follows from Holder's inequality. By the facts that

$$
\sum_{i=1}^{N_{T}} a_{i} \leq\left(N_{T}\right)^{\frac{1}{2}}\left(\sum_{i=1}^{N_{T}} a_{i}^{2}\right)^{\frac{1}{2}} \quad \text { and } \quad N_{T} \Delta t=T
$$

we have

$$
\sum_{i=1}^{N_{T}-2}\left\|S^{-1} \mathcal{N}^{i}\right\|_{W} \leq K h \sum_{i=1}^{2}\|\mathbf{E}\|_{H^{1}\left(0, T ; W^{1, p}\left(\Omega_{i}\right)\right)^{3}}
$$

(iv) Similiar to $\mathcal{N}^{i}$, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\mathcal{M}_{l}^{i} & =\int_{i \Delta t}^{(i+1) \Delta t}\left(\tilde{J}-S^{\prime} \dot{E}_{f}\right)_{l} d t+\Delta t\left(C^{\prime} B_{e}^{\prime i+\frac{1}{2}}\right)_{l} \\
& =-\int_{i \Delta t}^{(i+1) \Delta t}\left(C^{\prime} B_{e}^{\prime}\right)_{l} d t+\Delta t\left(C^{\prime} B_{e}^{\prime i+\frac{1}{2}}\right)_{l}
\end{aligned}
$$

and for any non-interface dual face $\kappa_{l}^{\prime}$, we can derive the following by the same argument as above:

$$
\left|\mathcal{M}_{l}^{i}\right|^{2} \leq K h^{4-\frac{6}{p}}(\Delta t)^{3} \int_{i \Delta t}^{(i+1) \Delta t}|\dot{\mathbf{B}}|_{\left(W^{1, p}\left(\tau_{j}^{\prime} \cup \tau_{k}^{\prime}\right)\right)^{3}}^{2} d t
$$

Now, for any interface dual face $\kappa_{l}^{\prime}, \mathcal{M}_{l}^{i}$ is a bounded linear functional with variable $\left(C^{\prime} B_{e}^{\prime}\right)_{l}$ and vanishes for any linear functions in time, so by Lemma 5.1, we have

$$
\left|\mathcal{M}_{l}^{i}\right| \leq K(\Delta t)^{2}\left\|C^{\prime} \ddot{B}_{e}^{\prime}\right\|_{L^{1}(i \Delta t,(i+1) \Delta t)} .
$$

Notice that

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left(C^{\prime} \ddot{B}_{e}^{\prime}\right)_{l} & =\sum_{\sigma_{j}^{\prime} \in \partial \kappa_{l}^{\prime}} \tilde{h}_{j}^{\prime}\left(\ddot{B}_{e}^{\prime}\right)_{j} \\
& =\sum_{\sigma_{j}^{\prime} \in \partial \kappa_{l}^{1}} \tilde{h}_{j}^{\prime}\left(\ddot{B}_{e}^{\prime}\right)_{j}+\sum_{\sigma_{j}^{\prime} \in \partial \kappa_{l}^{2}} \tilde{h}_{j}^{\prime}\left(\ddot{B}_{e}^{\prime}\right)_{j}+\frac{d^{2}}{d t^{2}}\left(\tilde{J}_{\Gamma}\right)_{j},
\end{aligned}
$$

where

$$
\tilde{J}_{\Gamma}:=\sum_{r=1}^{2} \int_{\gamma_{r}} \mathbf{J}_{\Gamma} \cdot \mathbf{n} d \sigma .
$$

Since the first term in the above equation vanishes for any constant functions, we have

$$
\left|\sum_{\sigma_{j}^{\prime} \in \partial \kappa_{l}^{1}} \tilde{h}_{j}^{\prime}\left(\ddot{B}_{e}^{\prime}\right)_{j}\right| \leq K h^{2-\frac{3}{p}}|\ddot{\mathbf{B}}|_{W^{1, p}\left(\left(\tau_{j}^{\prime} \cup \tau_{k}^{\prime}\right) \cap \Omega_{1}\right)^{3}},
$$

where $\tau_{j}^{\prime}$ and $\tau_{k}^{\prime}$ are two dual elements sharing the same dual face $\kappa_{l}^{\prime}$. Similarly, for the second term, we have

$$
\left|\sum_{\sigma_{j}^{\prime} \in \partial \kappa_{l}^{2}} \tilde{h}_{j}^{\prime}\left(\ddot{B}_{e}^{\prime}\right)_{j}\right| \leq K h^{2-\frac{3}{p}}|\ddot{\mathbf{B}}|_{W^{1, p}\left(\left(\tau_{j}^{\prime} \cup \tau_{k}^{\prime}\right) \cap \Omega_{2}\right)^{3}} .
$$

The last term can be estimated in the following way

$$
\left|\frac{d^{2}}{d t^{2}}\left(\tilde{J}_{\Gamma}\right)_{j}\right| \leq K h \max _{\Gamma}\left|\ddot{\mathbf{J}}_{\Gamma}\right| \leq K h\left\|\ddot{\mathbf{J}}_{\Gamma}\right\|_{W^{1, p}(\Gamma)^{3}} .
$$

Combining the results,

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left|\mathcal{M}_{l}^{i}\right| \leq & K h^{2-\frac{3}{p}}(\Delta t)^{2} \int_{i \Delta t}^{(i+1) \Delta t} \sum_{r=1}^{2}|\ddot{\mathbf{B}}|_{W^{1, p}\left(\left(\tau_{j}^{\prime} \cup \tau_{k}^{\prime}\right) \cap \Omega_{r}\right)^{3}} d t \\
& +K h(\Delta t)^{2} \int_{i \Delta t}^{(i+1) \Delta t}\left\|\ddot{\mathbf{J}}_{\Gamma}\right\|_{W^{1, p}(\Gamma)^{3}} d t .
\end{aligned}
$$

By the Cauchy-Schwarz's inequality, we obtain

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left|\mathcal{M}_{l}^{i}\right|^{2} \leq & K h^{4-\frac{6}{p}}(\Delta t)^{5} \int_{i \Delta t}^{(i+1) \Delta t} \sum_{r=1}^{2}|\ddot{\mathbf{B}}|_{W^{1, p}\left(\left(\tau_{j}^{\prime} \cup \tau_{k}^{\prime}\right) \cap \Omega_{r}\right)^{3}}^{2} d t \\
& +K h^{2}(\Delta t)^{5} \int_{i \Delta t}^{(i+1) \Delta t}\left\|\ddot{\mathbf{J}}_{\Gamma}\right\|_{W^{1, p}(\Gamma)^{3}}^{2} d t .
\end{aligned}
$$

Hence, by collecting the results for interface and non-interface components, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left\|S^{\prime-1} \mathcal{M}^{i}\right\|_{W^{\prime}}^{2}= & \sum_{l=1}^{M_{1}} \bar{s}_{l}^{\prime} h_{l}\left(\bar{s}_{l}^{\prime}\right)^{-2}\left|\mathcal{M}_{l}^{i}\right|^{2} \\
\leq & K h^{3-\frac{6}{p}}(\Delta t)^{5} \int_{i \Delta t}^{(i+1) \Delta t} \sum_{l=1}^{M_{1}} \sum_{r=1}^{2}|\ddot{\mathbf{B}}|_{W^{1, p}\left(\left(\tau_{j}^{\prime} \cup \tau_{k}^{\prime}\right) \cap \Omega_{r}\right)^{3}}^{2} d t \\
& +K h(\Delta t)^{5} N^{2} \int_{i \Delta t}^{(i+1) \Delta t}\left\|\mathbf{J}_{\Gamma}\right\|_{W^{1, p}(\Gamma)^{3}}^{2} d t
\end{aligned}
$$

since there are $O\left(N^{2}\right)$ interface components. So, by the Holder's inequality, we get

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left\|S^{\prime-1} \mathcal{M}^{i}\right\|_{W^{\prime}}^{2} \leq & K h^{4}(\Delta t) \sum_{r=1}^{2}\|\mathbf{B}\|_{H^{2}\left(i \Delta t,(i+1) \Delta t ; W^{1, p}\left(\Omega_{r}\right)\right)^{3}}^{2} \\
& +K h^{3}(\Delta t)\left|\mathbf{J}_{\Gamma}\right|_{H^{2}\left(i \Delta t,(i+1) \Delta t ; W^{1, p}(\Gamma)\right)^{3}}^{2},
\end{aligned}
$$

and consequently

$$
\sum_{i=1}^{N_{T}-1}\left\|S^{\prime-1} \mathcal{M}^{i}\right\|_{W^{\prime}} \leq K h^{2} \sum_{r=1}^{2}\|\mathbf{B}\|_{H^{2}\left(0, T ; W^{1, p}\left(\Omega_{r}\right)\right)^{3}}+K h^{\frac{3}{2}}\left|\mathbf{J}_{\Gamma}\right|_{H^{2}\left(0, T ; W^{1, p}(\Gamma)\right)^{3}} .
$$

Finally, collecting the terms in (i)-(iv), we get the desired result.

### 5.3.2 Rectangular domain

We devote this section to the convergence analysis of our fully discrete finite volume method when both the domains $\Omega$ and $\Omega_{1}$ are two cuboids. First, we have the following sharp form for the Bramble-Hilbert lemma.

Lemma 5.2 Suppose that $f$ is a bounded linear functional on the space $W^{2,1}(0, \Delta t)$ and $f(c)=0$ for any linear functions $c \in P_{1}(0, \Delta t)$. Then there exist a constant $K$ independent of $\Delta t$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
|f(v)| \leq K \Delta t|v|_{W^{2,1}(0, \Delta t)} . \tag{5.20}
\end{equation*}
$$

Moreover, if $f(c)=0$ for any quadratic functions $c \in P_{2}(0, \Delta t)$, then

$$
\begin{equation*}
|f(v)| \leq K(\Delta t)^{2}|v|_{W^{3,1}(0, \Delta t)} . \tag{5.21}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. Define a linear transformation $\hat{T}:[0, \Delta t] \rightarrow[0,1]$ by $\hat{t}=(\Delta t)^{-1} t$. Denote $\hat{v}$ be the transformed function, that is, $\hat{v}(\hat{t})=v\left((\Delta t)^{-1} \hat{t}\right)=v(t)$. Then, by the Bramble-Hilbert lemma, there exist a generic constant $K$ such that

$$
|f(\hat{v})| \leq K|\hat{v}|_{W^{2,1}(0,1)} .
$$

Notice that, by the chain rule

$$
\begin{aligned}
|\hat{v}|_{W^{2,1}(0,1)} & =\int_{0}^{1}\left|\frac{d^{2} \hat{v}}{d \hat{t}^{2}}\right| d \hat{t} \\
& =\int_{0}^{\Delta t}\left|(\Delta t)^{2} \frac{d^{2} v}{d t^{2}}\right|(\Delta t)^{-1} d t
\end{aligned}
$$

where in the last step, we have applied the inverse transformation $\hat{T}^{-1}$ to the integral. So, we obtain

$$
|\hat{v}|_{W^{2,1}(0,1)}=\Delta t \int_{0}^{\Delta t}\left|\frac{d^{2} v}{d t^{2}}\right| d t
$$

which implies (5.20). (5.21) can be proved by a similar argument.

We remark here that the above lemma can be generalized to the case that the space $W^{m, 1}(0, \Delta t)$ is replaced by $W^{m, 1}(n \Delta t,(n+1) \Delta t)$ for $m=2,3$.

From (5.2), we have the following two equations

$$
\begin{aligned}
S^{\prime}\left(E^{n+1}-E^{n}\right)-\Delta t C^{\prime} B^{n+\frac{1}{2}} & =\tilde{J}^{n+\frac{1}{2}} \\
S^{\prime}\left(E^{n+2}-E^{n+1}\right)-\Delta t C^{\prime} B^{n+\frac{3}{2}} & =\tilde{J}^{n+\frac{3}{2}}
\end{aligned}
$$

Subtracting, we have

$$
S^{\prime}\left(E^{n+2}-2 E^{n+1}+E^{n}\right)-\Delta t C^{\prime}\left(B^{n+\frac{3}{2}}-B^{n+\frac{1}{2}}\right)=\tilde{J}^{n+\frac{3}{2}}-\tilde{J}^{n+\frac{1}{2}}
$$

and by (5.3), we obtain finally

$$
\begin{equation*}
S^{\prime}\left(E^{n+2}-2 E^{n+1}+E^{n}\right)+(\Delta t)^{2} C^{\prime} S^{-1} C E^{n+1}=\tilde{J}^{n+\frac{3}{2}}-\tilde{J}^{n+\frac{1}{2}} \tag{5.22}
\end{equation*}
$$

For simplicity, we define $U^{n}:=E^{n}-E_{e}^{n}$. Then, we rewrite (5.22) into the following form

$$
\begin{align*}
& S^{\prime}\left(U^{n+2}-2 U^{n+1}+U^{n}\right)+(\Delta t)^{2} C^{\prime} S^{-1} C U^{n+1} \\
= & \tilde{J}^{n+\frac{3}{2}}-\tilde{J}^{n+\frac{1}{2}}-S^{\prime}\left(E_{e}^{n+2}-2 E_{e}^{n+1}+E_{e}^{n}\right)-(\Delta t)^{2} C^{\prime} S^{-1} C E_{e}^{n+1} . \tag{5.23}
\end{align*}
$$

From (4.1), we know that

$$
C E_{e}^{n+1}=-S \frac{d}{d t} B_{f}^{n+1}
$$

so (5.23) becomes

$$
\begin{align*}
& S^{\prime}\left(U^{n+2}-2 U^{n+1}+U^{n}\right)+(\Delta t)^{2} C^{\prime} S^{-1} C U^{n+1} \\
= & \tilde{J}^{n+\frac{3}{2}}-\tilde{J}^{n+\frac{1}{2}}-S^{\prime}\left(E_{e}^{n+2}-2 E_{e}^{n+1}+E_{e}^{n}\right)+(\Delta t)^{2} C^{\prime} \frac{d}{d t} B_{f}^{n+1} . \tag{5.24}
\end{align*}
$$

We further rewrite (5.24) into the following form

$$
\begin{align*}
& S^{\prime}\left(U^{n+2}-2 U^{n+1}+U^{n}\right)+(\Delta t)^{2} C^{\prime} S^{-1} C U^{n+1} \\
= & \tilde{J}^{n+\frac{3}{2}}-\tilde{J}^{n+\frac{1}{2}}-S^{\prime}\left(E_{e}^{n+2}-2 E_{e}^{n+1}+E_{e}^{n}\right)+\Delta t C^{\prime}\left(B_{f}^{n+\frac{3}{2}}-B_{f}^{n+\frac{1}{2}}\right)+\mathcal{Q}^{n+1}, \tag{5.25}
\end{align*}
$$

where

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{Q}^{n+1}:=(\Delta t)^{2} C^{\prime} \frac{d}{d t} B_{f}^{n+1}-\Delta t C^{\prime}\left(B_{f}^{n+\frac{3}{2}}-B_{f}^{n+\frac{1}{2}}\right) \tag{5.26}
\end{equation*}
$$

Now we can rewrite (5.25) as

$$
\begin{align*}
& S^{\prime}\left(U^{n+2}-2 U^{n+1}+U^{n}\right)+(\Delta t)^{2} C^{\prime} S^{-1} C U^{n+1} \\
= & \left(\tilde{J}^{n+\frac{3}{2}}-S^{\prime}\left(E_{e}^{n+2}-E_{e}^{n+1}\right)+\int_{(n+1) \Delta t}^{(n+2) \Delta t} C^{\prime} B_{f} d s\right) \\
& -\left(\tilde{J}^{n+\frac{1}{2}}-S^{\prime}\left(E_{e}^{n+1}-E_{e}^{n}\right)+\int_{n \Delta t}^{(n+1) \Delta t} C^{\prime} B_{f} d s\right)+\mathcal{R}^{n+\frac{3}{2}}-\mathcal{R}^{n+\frac{1}{2}}+\mathcal{Q}^{n+1}, \tag{5.27}
\end{align*}
$$

where

$$
\mathcal{R}^{n+\frac{1}{2}}:=\Delta t C^{\prime} B_{f}^{n+\frac{1}{2}}-\int_{n \Delta t}^{(n+1) \Delta t} C^{\prime} B_{f} d s
$$

Multiplying both sides of (5.27) by $D\left(U^{n+2}-U^{n}\right)$ and summing up all the equations from $n=0$ to $n=j$, for any integer $j$ with $0 \leq j \leq N_{T}-3$, we obtain

$$
\begin{align*}
& \left\|U^{j+2}-U^{j+1}\right\|_{W^{\prime}}^{2}+(\Delta t)^{2}\left(C^{\prime} S^{-1} C U^{j+2}, D U^{j+1}\right)  \tag{5.28}\\
= & \left\|U^{1}-U^{0}\right\|_{W^{\prime}}^{2}+\mathcal{A}_{3}+\mathcal{A}_{4},
\end{align*}
$$

where

$$
\begin{aligned}
\mathcal{A}_{3}:= & \sum_{n=0}^{j}\left(\left(\tilde{J}^{n+\frac{3}{2}}-S^{\prime}\left(E_{e}^{n+2}-E_{e}^{n+1}\right)+\int_{(n+1) \Delta t}^{(n+2) \Delta t} C^{\prime} B_{f} d s\right)\right. \\
& \left.\quad-\left(\tilde{J}^{n+\frac{1}{2}}-S^{\prime}\left(E_{e}^{n+1}-E_{e}^{n}\right)+\int_{n \Delta t}^{(n+1) \Delta t} C^{\prime} B_{f} d s\right), D\left(U^{n+2}-U^{n}\right)\right), \\
\mathcal{A}_{4}:= & \sum_{n=0}^{j}\left(\mathcal{R}^{n+\frac{3}{2}}-\mathcal{R}^{n+\frac{1}{2}}+\mathcal{Q}^{n+1}, D\left(U^{n+2}-U^{n}\right)\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

We further rewrite (5.28) into the following form

$$
\begin{align*}
& \left\|U^{j+2}-U^{j+1}\right\|_{W^{\prime}}^{2}+(\Delta t)^{2}\left\|U^{j+2}\right\|_{V}^{2}  \tag{5.29}\\
= & \left\|U^{1}-U^{0}\right\|_{W^{\prime}}^{2}+(\Delta t)^{2}\left(C^{\prime} S^{-1} C U^{j+2}, D\left(U^{j+2}-U^{j+1}\right)\right)+\mathcal{A}_{3}+\mathcal{A}_{4} .
\end{align*}
$$

Analogous to Lemma 4.4 and Lemma 4.5, we have the following:

Lemma 5.3 Assume that $C\left(E^{n}-E_{e}^{n}\right) \neq 0$ for $2 \leq n \leq N_{T}-1$. Then there exist a constant $K$ independent of $h$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|E^{n}-E_{e}^{n}\right\|_{W_{\Gamma}} \leq K\left\|E^{n}-E_{e}^{n}\right\|_{V} \tag{5.30}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. By (3.15) in Lemma 3.5, we have for any $u \in \mathbb{R}^{M}$ with $\left.u\right|_{\partial \Omega}=0$ and $C u \neq 0$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(S^{\prime} u, D u\right) \leq K\left(D^{\prime} S^{-1} C u, C u\right) . \tag{5.31}
\end{equation*}
$$

Consider the following auxillary problem: Find $\tilde{u}^{n+1} \in \mathbb{R}^{M}$ such that

$$
\begin{cases}C \tilde{u}^{n+1}=S l^{n+1}, & \text { for all interior primal face }  \tag{5.32}\\ \tilde{u}^{n+1}=E^{n+1}-E_{e}^{n+1}, & \text { for all interface primal edge }\end{cases}
$$

where

$$
l^{n+1}:=\frac{d}{d t} B_{f}^{n+1}-(\Delta t)^{-1}\left(B^{n+\frac{3}{2}}-B^{n+\frac{1}{2}}\right)
$$

By (4.23) and (5.3), we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
C\left(E^{n+1}-E_{e}^{n+1}\right)=S \frac{d}{d t} B_{f}^{n+1}-(\Delta t)^{-1} S\left(B^{n+\frac{3}{2}}-B^{n+\frac{1}{2}}\right) \tag{5.33}
\end{equation*}
$$

Hence, the problem (5.32) has a solution $\tilde{u}^{n+1}=E^{n+1}-E_{e}^{n+1}$. Now, we solve the problem (5.32) in the following way. For each $\tilde{u}_{j}^{n+1}$ corresponding to an primal edge $\sigma_{j}$ in $\Omega_{2}$, we take $\tilde{u}_{j}^{n+1}=\left(E^{n+1}-E_{e}^{n+1}\right)_{j}$, where $\left(E^{n+1}-E_{e}^{n+1}\right)_{j}$ is a component of $E^{n+1}-E_{e}^{n+1}$ corresponding to $\sigma_{j}$. Then, with the components corresponding to $\Omega_{2}$ and $\Gamma$ are already fixed, we rewrite (5.32) into the following linear system

$$
\begin{equation*}
G_{1} D \tilde{u}^{n+1}=b^{n+1} \tag{5.34}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $b^{n+1}$ is a vector containing all the related known components and $G_{1}$ is the restriction of $G$ to $\Omega_{1}$. We remark here that in system (5.34), number of equations is in general greater than number of unknowns. However, since (5.32) has a solution, the system (5.34) is consistent.

Since the matrix $G_{1}$ has the same structure as the matrix $G$, by Lemma 3.3, there are $O\left(N^{3}\right)$ free variables in the system (5.34). We choose these free variables are the interface components with the condition that each component appears $O(N)$ times. We can do this since there are $O\left(N^{2}\right)$ interface components. Then, after fixing free variables, the other components can be uniquely determined by solving the system (5.34).

Putting $\tilde{u}^{n+1}$ into the equation (5.31), we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(S^{\prime} \tilde{u}^{n+1}, D \tilde{u}^{n+1}\right) \leq K\left(D^{\prime} S^{-1} C \tilde{u}^{n+1}, C \tilde{u}^{n+1}\right) \tag{5.35}
\end{equation*}
$$

For the left hand side, we have

$$
\left(S^{\prime} \tilde{u}^{n+1}, D \tilde{u}^{n+1}\right) \geq\left(S^{\prime} \bar{u}^{n+1}, D \bar{u}^{n+1}\right)
$$

where $\bar{u}$ denotes a vector having the same interface components and free components as $\tilde{u}^{n+1}$ and having the other components vanish. So, we have

$$
\left(S^{\prime} \bar{u}^{n+1}, D \bar{u}^{n+1}\right) \geq K\left\|E^{n+1}-E_{e}^{n+1}\right\|_{W_{\Gamma}}^{2} .
$$

For the right hand side, since $\tilde{u}^{n+1}$ is the solution to the system (5.34), we have

$$
\left(D^{\prime} S^{-1} C \tilde{u}^{n+1}, C \tilde{u}^{n+1}\right)=\left(D^{\prime} l^{n+1}, S l^{n+1}\right)
$$

Multiplying both sides of (5.33) by $D^{\prime} l^{n+1}$, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \left(S l^{n+1}, D^{\prime} l^{n+1}\right) \\
= & \left(C\left(E^{n+1}-E_{e}^{n+1}\right), D^{\prime} l^{n+1}\right) \\
\leq & K\left(D^{\prime} S^{-1} C\left(E^{n+1}-E_{e}^{n+1}\right), C\left(E^{n+1}-E_{e}^{n+1}\right)\right)^{\frac{1}{2}}\left(S l^{n+1}, D^{\prime} l^{n+1}\right)^{\frac{1}{2}} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Hence, we obtain the desired estimate.

Lemma 5.4 Assume that $C\left(E^{n}-E_{e}^{n}\right) \neq 0$ for $2 \leq n \leq N_{T}-1$. Then there exist a constant $K$ independent of $h$ such that

$$
\begin{align*}
& \max _{\sigma_{j} \in \Gamma}\left|E^{n}-E_{e}^{n}\right|_{j} \leq K\left\|E^{n}-E_{e}^{n}\right\|_{V}  \tag{5.36}\\
& \max _{\sigma_{j} \in \Omega}\left|E^{n}-E_{e}^{n}\right|_{j} \leq K\left\|E^{n}-E_{e}^{n}\right\|_{V} \tag{5.37}
\end{align*}
$$

Proof. (5.36) follows from the the proof of Lemma 5.3 by choosing all the free variables as $\max _{\sigma_{j} \in \Gamma}\left|E^{n}-E_{e}^{n}\right|_{j}$. Similarly, (5.37) follows from the the proof of Lemma 5.3 by choosing all the free variables as $\max _{\sigma_{j} \in \Omega}\left|E^{n}-E_{e}^{n}\right|_{j}$.

In the following theorem, we give the $V$-norm estimate for $E^{n}-E_{e}^{n}$.
Theorem 5.5 Assume that $\mathbf{B} \in W^{2,1}\left(0, T ; H^{3}\left(\Omega_{i}\right)\right)^{3} \cap W^{4,1}\left(0, T ; H^{2}\left(\Omega_{r}\right)\right)^{3}$, for $i=1,2$, satisfies (1.1)-(1.4), $\mathbf{J} \in W^{2,1}\left(0, T ; H^{2}(\Omega)\right)^{3}$ and $\mathbf{J}_{\Gamma} \in W^{2,1}\left(0, T ; H^{3}(\Gamma)\right)^{3}$. Let $E^{n}, 0 \leq n \leq N_{T}-1$, be the solution of (5.2)-(5.3) on uniform grids. Then under the stability condition

$$
\begin{equation*}
c_{m} \Delta t<\frac{\min \left(h_{i j}\right)}{2 M_{2}} \tag{5.38}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $M_{2}$ is the maximum of the ratios of the maximum to minimum edge lengths over the union of adjacent elements, and

$$
c_{m}^{2}:=\frac{1}{\min \left(\epsilon_{1}, \epsilon_{2}\right) \min \left(\mu_{1}, \mu_{2}\right)},
$$

we have

$$
\begin{array}{rl} 
& \max _{0 \leq n \leq N_{T}-1}\left\|E^{n}-E_{e}^{n}\right\|_{V} \\
\leq K & K h^{2}\left(\sum_{r=1}^{2}\|\mathbf{B}\|_{W^{2,1}\left(0, T ; H^{3}\left(\Omega_{r}\right)\right)^{3}}+\sum_{r=1}^{2}\|\mathbf{B}\|_{W^{4,1}\left(0, T ; H^{2}\left(\Omega_{r}\right)\right)^{3}}\right.  \tag{5.39}\\
& \left.+\|\mathbf{J}\|_{W^{2,1}\left(0, T ; H^{2}(\Omega)\right)^{2}}+\left\|\mathbf{J}_{\Gamma}\right\|_{W^{2,1}\left(0, T ; H^{3}(\Gamma)\right)^{3}}\right) .
\end{array}
$$

Proof. By considering (5.29), we divide the proof into three parts.
(i) First, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
& (\Delta t)^{2}\left(C^{\prime} S^{-1} C U^{j+2}, D\left(U^{j+2}-U^{j+1}\right)\right) \\
\leq & (\Delta t)^{2}\left(C^{\prime} D^{\prime-\frac{1}{2}} S^{-\frac{1}{2}}\left(D^{\prime} S^{-1}\right)^{\frac{1}{2}} C U^{j+2}, S^{\prime-\frac{1}{2}} D^{\frac{1}{2}}\left(S^{\prime} D\right)^{\frac{1}{2}}\left(U^{j+2}-U^{j+1}\right)\right) \\
\leq & (\Delta t)^{2}\left\|S^{\prime-\frac{1}{2}} D^{\frac{1}{2}} C^{\prime} D^{\prime-\frac{1}{2}} S^{-\frac{1}{2}}\right\|_{2}\left\|U^{j+2}\right\|_{V}\left\|U^{j+2}-U^{j+1}\right\|_{W^{\prime}} .
\end{aligned}
$$

From elementary linear algebra, we know that $\left\|S^{\prime-\frac{1}{2}} D^{\frac{1}{2}} C^{\prime} D^{\prime-\frac{1}{2}} S^{-\frac{1}{2}}\right\|_{2}$ is the largest singular value of the matrix $S^{\prime-\frac{1}{2}} D^{\frac{1}{2}} C^{\prime} D^{\prime-\frac{1}{2}} S^{-\frac{1}{2}}$. By the Gerschgorin's theorem,

$$
\left\|S^{\prime-\frac{1}{2}} D^{\frac{1}{2}} C^{\prime} D^{\prime-\frac{1}{2}} S^{-\frac{1}{2}}\right\|_{2} \leq \frac{4}{\min \left(\epsilon_{1}, \epsilon_{2}\right)^{\frac{1}{2}} \min \left(\mu_{1}, \mu_{2}\right)^{\frac{1}{2}}} \max \left(\frac{\max _{i j}\left(h_{i j}\right)^{\frac{3}{2}}}{\min _{i j}\left(h_{i j}\right)^{\frac{5}{2}}}\right)
$$

where $\max _{i j}$ and $\min _{i j}$ are taken over the union of adjacent elements. From the definitions of $c_{m}$ and $M_{2}$, we obtain

$$
\begin{aligned}
& (\Delta t)^{2}\left(C^{\prime} S^{-1} C U^{j+2}, D\left(U^{j+2}-U^{j+1}\right)\right) \\
\leq & (\Delta t)^{2} \frac{4 M_{2} c_{m}}{\min _{i j}\left(h_{i j}\right)}\left\|U^{j+2}\right\|_{V}\left\|U^{j+2}-U^{j+1}\right\|_{W^{\prime}} \\
\leq & \Delta t \frac{2 M_{2} c_{m}}{\min _{i j}\left(h_{i j}\right)}\left(\left\|U^{j+2}-U^{j+1}\right\|_{W^{\prime}}^{2}+(\Delta t)^{2}\left\|U^{j+2}\right\|_{V}^{2}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

(ii) We now estimate $\mathcal{A}_{3}$. By the definition of $\tilde{J}^{n+\frac{3}{2}}$, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \tilde{J}^{n+\frac{3}{2}}-S^{\prime}\left(E_{e}^{n+2}-E_{e}^{n+1}\right)+\int_{(n+1) \Delta t}^{(n+2) \Delta t} C^{\prime} B_{f} d s \\
= & \int_{(n+1) \Delta t}^{(n+2) \Delta t}\left(\tilde{J}-S^{\prime} \frac{d E_{e}}{d t}+C^{\prime} B_{f}\right) d s \\
= & \int_{(n+1) \Delta t}^{(n+2) \Delta t} f d s .
\end{aligned}
$$

Similarly, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \tilde{J}^{n+\frac{1}{2}}-S^{\prime}\left(E_{e}^{n+1}-E_{e}^{n}\right)+\int_{n \Delta t}^{(n+1) \Delta t} C^{\prime} B_{f} d s \\
= & \int_{n \Delta t}^{(n+1) \Delta t} f d s .
\end{aligned}
$$

Observe that

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \int_{(n+1) \Delta t}^{(n+2) \Delta t} f d s-\int_{n \Delta t}^{(n+1) \Delta t} f d s \\
= & \left(\int_{(n+1) \Delta t}^{(n+2) \Delta t} f d s-\Delta t f\left(t_{n+1}\right)\right)+\left(\Delta t f\left(t_{n+1}\right)-\int_{n \Delta t}^{(n+1) \Delta t} f d s\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

By virtue of the Taylor expansion, there exist $\xi^{n+\frac{3}{2}} \in((n+1) \Delta t,(n+2) \Delta t)$ such that

$$
\int_{(n+1) \Delta t}^{(n+2) \Delta t} f d s-\Delta t f\left(t_{n+1}\right)=\frac{1}{2}(\Delta t)^{2} \frac{d}{d t} f\left(\xi^{n+\frac{3}{2}}\right)
$$

Similarly, there exist $\xi^{n+\frac{1}{2}} \in(n \Delta t,(n+1) \Delta t)$ such that

$$
\Delta t f\left(t_{n+1}\right)-\int_{n \Delta t}^{(n+1) \Delta t} f d s=\frac{1}{2}(\Delta t)^{2} \frac{d}{d t} f\left(\xi^{n+\frac{1}{2}}\right)
$$

So, we rewrite $\mathcal{A}_{3}$ as

$$
\mathcal{A}_{3}=\sum_{n=0}^{j}\left(\frac{1}{2}(\Delta t)^{2} \frac{d}{d t} f\left(\xi^{n+\frac{3}{2}}\right)+\frac{1}{2}(\Delta t)^{2} \frac{d}{d t} f\left(\xi^{n+\frac{1}{2}}\right), D\left(U^{n+2}-U^{n}\right)\right)
$$

Also, there exist $\eta^{n+1} \in\left(\xi^{n+\frac{1}{2}}, \xi^{n+\frac{3}{2}}\right) \subset(n \Delta t,(n+2) \Delta t)$ such that

$$
\frac{1}{2}(\Delta t)^{2} \frac{d}{d t} f\left(\xi^{n+\frac{3}{2}}\right)+\frac{1}{2}(\Delta t)^{2} \frac{d}{d t} f\left(\xi^{n+\frac{1}{2}}\right)=(\Delta t)^{2} \frac{d}{d t} f\left(\eta^{n+1}\right)
$$

and consequently

$$
\mathcal{A}_{3}=\sum_{n=0}^{j}(\Delta t)^{2}\left(\frac{d}{d t} f\left(\eta^{n+1}\right), D\left(U^{n+2}-U^{n}\right)\right)
$$

By summation by parts, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\mathcal{A}_{3}= & (\Delta t)^{2}\left(\frac{d}{d t} f\left(\eta_{j+1}\right), D U^{j+2}\right)+(\Delta t)^{2}\left(\frac{d}{d t} f\left(\eta_{j}\right), D U^{j+1}\right) \\
& -\sum_{n=2}^{j}(\Delta t)^{2}\left(\frac{d}{d t} f\left(\eta_{n+1}\right)-\frac{d}{d t} f\left(\eta_{n-1}\right), D U^{n}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

By Lemma 4.3, Lemma 5.3 and Lemma 5.4, we follow the same proof as in Theorem 4.5, then the following can be proved

$$
\left(\frac{d}{d t} f\left(\eta_{j+1}\right), D U^{j+2}\right) \leq K h^{2}\left(\sum_{r=1}^{2}|\dot{\mathbf{B}}|_{H^{3}\left(\Omega_{r}\right)^{3}}+|\dot{\mathbf{J}}|_{H^{2}(\Omega)^{3}}+\left|\dot{\mathbf{J}}_{\Gamma}\right|_{H^{3}(\Gamma)^{3}}\right)\left(\eta_{j+1}\right)\left\|U^{j+2}\right\|_{V}
$$

Consequently, we obtain

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \left(\frac{d}{d t} f\left(\eta_{j+1}\right), D U^{j+2}\right) \\
\leq & K h^{2} \max _{2 \leq n \leq N_{T}-1}\left\|U^{n}\right\|_{V} \\
& \times\left(\sum_{r=1}^{2}\|\mathbf{B}\|_{W^{2,1}\left(0, T ; H^{3}\left(\Omega_{r}\right)\right)^{3}}+\|\mathbf{J}\|_{W^{2,1}\left(0, T ; H^{2}(\Omega)\right)^{3}}+\left\|\mathbf{J}_{\Gamma}\right\|_{W^{2,1}\left(0, T ; H^{3}(\Gamma)\right)^{3}}\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

Similarly,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \left(\frac{d}{d t} f\left(\eta_{j}\right), D U^{j+1}\right) \\
\leq & K h^{2} \max _{2 \leq n \leq N_{T}-1}\left\|U^{n}\right\|_{V} \\
& \times\left(\sum_{r=1}^{2}\|\mathbf{B}\|_{W^{2,1}\left(0, T ; H^{3}\left(\Omega_{r}\right)\right)^{3}}+\|\mathbf{J}\|_{W^{2,1}\left(0, T ; H^{2}(\Omega)\right)^{3}}+\left\|\mathbf{J}_{\Gamma}\right\|_{W^{2,1}\left(0, T ; H^{2}(\Gamma)\right)^{3}}\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

By the definition of integral, we have

$$
\frac{d}{d t} f\left(\eta^{n+1}\right)-\frac{d}{d t} f\left(\eta^{n-1}\right)=\int_{\eta^{n-1}}^{\eta^{n+1}} \frac{d^{2} f}{d t^{2}} d s
$$

Following the proof in Theorem 4.5, we obtain

$$
\left(\frac{d^{2} f}{d t^{2}}, D U^{n}\right) \leq K h^{2}\left(\sum_{r=1}^{2}|\ddot{\mathbf{B}}|_{H^{3}(\Omega)^{3}}+|\ddot{\mathbf{J}}|_{H^{2}(\Omega)^{3}}+\left|\ddot{\mathbf{J}}_{\Gamma}\right|_{H^{3}(\Gamma)^{3}}\right)\left\|U^{n}\right\|_{V}
$$

So,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& -\sum_{n=2}^{j}\left(\frac{d}{d t} f\left(\eta^{n+1}\right)-\frac{d}{d t} f\left(\eta^{n-1}\right), D U^{n}\right) \\
\leq & K h^{2} \sum_{n=2}^{j} \int_{\eta^{n-1}}^{\eta^{n+1}}\left(\sum_{r=1}^{2}|\ddot{\mathbf{B}}|_{H^{3}\left(\Omega_{r}\right)^{3}}+|\ddot{\mathbf{J}}|_{H^{2}(\Omega)^{3}}+\left|\ddot{\mathbf{J}}_{\Gamma}\right|_{H^{3}(\Gamma)^{3}}\right)\left\|U^{n}\right\|_{V},
\end{aligned}
$$

and consequently,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& -\sum_{n=2}^{j}\left(\frac{d}{d t} f\left(\eta^{n+1}\right)-\frac{d}{d t} f\left(\eta^{n-1}\right), D U^{n}\right) \\
\leq & K h^{2} \max _{2 \leq n \leq N_{T}-1}\left\|U^{n}\right\|_{V} \sum_{n=2}^{j} \int_{(n-2) \Delta t}^{(n+2) \Delta t}\left(\sum_{r=1}^{2}|\ddot{\mathbf{B}}|_{H^{3}\left(\Omega_{r}\right)^{3}}+|\ddot{\mathbf{J}}|_{H^{2}(\Omega)^{3}}+\left|\ddot{\mathbf{J}}_{\Gamma}\right|_{H^{3}(\Gamma)^{3}}\right) \\
\leq & K h^{2} \max _{2 \leq n \leq N_{T}-1}\left\|U^{n}\right\|_{V} \\
& \times\left(\sum_{r=1}^{2}|\mathbf{B}|_{W^{2,1}\left(0, T ; H^{3}(\Omega r)\right)^{3}}+|\mathbf{J}|_{W^{2,1}\left(0, T ; H^{2}(\Omega)\right)^{3}}+\left|\mathbf{J}_{\Gamma}\right|_{W^{2,1}\left(0, T ; H^{3}(\Gamma)\right)^{3}}\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

(iii) We rewrite $\mathcal{Q}^{n+1}$ as

$$
\mathcal{Q}^{n+1}=(\Delta t)^{2} G^{T}\left(D^{\prime} \dot{B}_{f}^{n+1}-\frac{1}{\Delta t} \int_{\left(n+\frac{1}{2}\right) \Delta t}^{\left(n+\frac{3}{2}\right) \Delta t} D^{\prime} \dot{B}_{f} d s\right) .
$$

Hence, we have

$$
\left(\mathcal{Q}^{n+1}, D\left(U^{n+2}-U^{n}\right)\right)=(\Delta t)^{2}\left(D^{\prime}\left(\dot{B}_{f}^{n+1}-\frac{1}{\Delta t} \int_{\left(n+\frac{1}{2}\right) \Delta t}^{\left(n+\frac{3}{2}\right) \Delta t} \dot{B}_{f} d s\right), C\left(U^{n+2}-U^{n}\right)\right)
$$

By using the Taylor expansion, there exist $\xi^{n+1} \in\left(\left(n+\frac{1}{2}\right) \Delta t,\left(n+\frac{3}{2}\right) \Delta t\right)$ such that

$$
\dot{B}_{f}^{n+1}-\frac{1}{\Delta t} \int_{\left(n+\frac{1}{2}\right) \Delta t}^{\left(n+\frac{3}{2}\right) \Delta t} \dot{B}_{f} d s=\frac{1}{24}(\Delta t)^{2} \dddot{B}_{f}\left(\xi^{n+1}\right) .
$$

So, we have

$$
\left(\mathcal{Q}^{n+1}, D\left(U^{n+2}-U^{n}\right)\right)=\frac{1}{24}(\Delta t)^{4}\left(D^{\prime} \dddot{B}_{f}\left(\xi^{n+1}\right), C\left(U^{n+2}-U^{n}\right)\right)
$$

By summation by parts, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \sum_{n=0}^{j}\left(\mathcal{Q}^{n+1}, D\left(U^{n+2}-U^{n}\right)\right) \\
= & \frac{1}{24}(\Delta t)^{4}\left(D^{\prime} \dddot{B}_{f}\left(\xi^{j+1}\right), C U^{j+2}\right)+\frac{1}{24}(\Delta t)^{4}\left(D^{\prime} \dddot{B}_{f}\left(\xi^{j}\right), C U^{j+1}\right) \\
& -\frac{1}{24}(\Delta t)^{4} \sum_{n=2}^{j}\left(D^{\prime}\left(\dddot{B}_{f}\left(\xi^{n+1}\right)-\dddot{B}_{f}\left(\xi^{n-1}\right)\right), C U^{n}\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

Notice that

$$
\left\|\dddot{B}_{f}\right\|_{W} \leq K \sum_{r=1}^{2}|\dddot{\mathbf{B}}|_{C^{0}\left(\Omega_{r}\right)^{3}} \leq K \sum_{r=1}^{2}|\dddot{\mathbf{B}}|_{H^{2}\left(\Omega_{r}\right)^{3}}
$$

So, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \frac{1}{24}(\Delta t)^{4}\left(D^{\prime} \dddot{B}_{f}\left(\xi^{j+1}\right), C U^{j+2}\right) \\
\leq & K(\Delta t)^{4}\left\|\dddot{B}_{f}\left(\xi^{j+1}\right)\right\|_{W}\left\|U^{j+2}\right\|_{V} \\
\leq & K(\Delta t)^{4} \max _{2 \leq n \leq N_{T}-1}\left\|U^{n}\right\|_{V} \sum_{r=1}^{2}\left|\dddot{\mathbf{B}}\left(\xi^{j+1}\right)\right|_{H^{2}\left(\Omega_{r}\right)^{3}} \\
\leq & K h^{2}(\Delta t)^{2} \max _{2 \leq n \leq N_{T}-1}\left\|U^{n}\right\|_{V} \sum_{r=1}^{2}\|\mathbf{B}\|_{W^{4,1}\left(0, T ; H^{2}\left(\Omega_{r}\right)\right)^{3}},
\end{aligned}
$$

and

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \frac{1}{24}(\Delta t)^{4}\left(D^{\prime} \dddot{B}_{f}\left(\xi^{j}\right), C U^{j+1}\right) \\
& \leq K h^{2}(\Delta t)^{2} \max _{2 \leq n \leq N_{T}-1}\left\|U^{n}\right\|_{V} \sum_{r=1}^{2}\|\mathbf{B}\|_{W^{4,1}\left(0, T ; H^{2}\left(\Omega_{r}\right)\right)^{3}} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Similarly, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
& -\frac{1}{24}(\Delta t)^{4} \sum_{n=2}^{j}\left(D^{\prime}\left(\dddot{B}_{f}\left(\xi^{n+1}\right)-\dddot{B}_{f}\left(\xi^{n-1}\right)\right), C U^{n}\right) \\
= & -\frac{1}{24}(\Delta t)^{4} \sum_{n=2}^{j} \int_{\xi^{n-1}}^{\xi^{n+1}}\left(D^{\prime} \frac{d^{4}}{d t^{4}} B_{f}, C U^{n}\right) d s \\
\leq & K(\Delta t)^{4} \sum_{n=2}^{j} \int_{\xi^{n-1}}^{\xi^{n+1}}\left\|\frac{d^{4}}{d t^{4}} B_{f}\right\|_{W}\left\|U^{n}\right\|_{V} d s \\
\leq & K h^{2}(\Delta t)^{2} \max _{2 \leq n \leq N_{T}-1}\left\|U^{n}\right\|_{V} \sum_{n=2}^{j} \int_{\xi^{n-1}}^{\xi^{n+1}}\left|\frac{\partial^{4} \mathbf{B}}{\partial t^{4}}\right|_{H^{2}\left(\Omega_{r}\right)^{3}} d s,
\end{aligned}
$$

and consequently,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& -\frac{1}{24}(\Delta t)^{4} \sum_{n=2}^{j}\left(D^{\prime}\left(\dddot{B}_{f}\left(\xi^{n+1}\right)-\dddot{B}_{f}\left(\xi^{n-1}\right)\right), C U^{n}\right) \\
\leq & K h^{2}(\Delta t)^{2} \max _{2 \leq n \leq N_{T}-1}\left\|U^{n}\right\|_{V}|\mathbf{B}|_{W^{4,1}\left(0, T ; H^{2}\left(\Omega_{r}\right)\right)^{3}}
\end{aligned}
$$

(iv) We rewrite $\mathcal{R}^{n+\frac{3}{2}}$ as

$$
\mathcal{R}^{n+\frac{3}{2}}=\Delta t G^{T} D^{\prime}\left(B_{f}^{n+\frac{3}{2}}-\frac{1}{\Delta t} \int_{(n+1) \Delta t}^{(n+2) \Delta t} B_{f} d s\right) .
$$

Similarly, we have

$$
\mathcal{R}^{n+\frac{1}{2}}=\Delta t G^{T} D^{\prime}\left(B_{f}^{n+\frac{1}{2}}-\frac{1}{\Delta t} \int_{n \Delta t}^{(n+1) \Delta t} B_{f} d s\right)
$$

So, we get

$$
\left(\mathcal{R}^{n+\frac{3}{2}}-\mathcal{R}^{n+\frac{1}{2}}, D\left(U^{n+2}-U^{n}\right)\right)=\Delta t\left(D^{\prime} I^{n+1}, C\left(U^{n+2}-U^{n}\right)\right)
$$

where

$$
I^{n+1}:=\left(B_{f}^{n+\frac{3}{2}}-\frac{1}{\Delta t} \int_{(n+1) \Delta t}^{(n+2) \Delta t} B_{f} d s\right)-\left(B_{f}^{n+\frac{1}{2}}-\frac{1}{\Delta t} \int_{n \Delta t}^{(n+1) \Delta t} B_{f} d s\right) .
$$

By the Taylor expansion, there exist $\xi^{n+\frac{3}{2}} \in((n+1) \Delta t,(n+2) \Delta t)$ such that

$$
\begin{aligned}
& B_{f}^{n+\frac{3}{2}}-\frac{1}{\Delta t} \int_{(n+1) \Delta t}^{(n+2) \Delta t} B_{f} d s \\
= & -\frac{1}{24}(\Delta t)^{2} \ddot{B}_{f}^{n+\frac{3}{2}}-\frac{1}{\Delta t} \int_{(n+1) \Delta t}^{(n+2) \Delta t} \frac{1}{24}\left(s-t_{n+\frac{3}{2}}\right)^{4} \frac{\partial^{4}}{\partial t^{4}} B_{f}\left(\xi^{n+\frac{3}{2}}\right) d s
\end{aligned}
$$

Also, there exist $\xi^{n+\frac{1}{2}} \in(n \Delta t,(n+1) \Delta t)$ such that

$$
\begin{aligned}
& B_{f}^{n+\frac{1}{2}}-\frac{1}{\Delta t} \int_{n \Delta t}^{(n+1) \Delta t} B_{f} d s \\
= & -\frac{1}{24}(\Delta t)^{2} \ddot{B}_{f}^{n+\frac{1}{2}}-\frac{1}{\Delta t} \int_{n \Delta t}^{(n+1) \Delta t} \frac{1}{24}\left(s-t_{n+\frac{1}{2}}\right)^{4} \frac{\partial^{4}}{\partial t^{4}} B_{f}\left(\xi^{n+\frac{1}{2}}\right) d s .
\end{aligned}
$$

Hence,

$$
I^{n+1}=I_{1}^{n+1}+I_{2}^{n+1}
$$

where

$$
\begin{aligned}
I_{1}^{n+1}:= & -\frac{1}{24}(\Delta t)^{2}\left(\ddot{B}_{f}^{n+\frac{3}{2}}-\ddot{B}_{f}^{n+\frac{1}{2}}\right) \\
I_{2}^{n+1}:= & -\frac{1}{\Delta t} \int_{(n+1) \Delta t}^{(n+2) \Delta t} \frac{1}{24}\left(s-t_{n+\frac{3}{2}}\right)^{4} \frac{\partial^{4}}{\partial t^{4}} B_{f}\left(\xi^{n+\frac{3}{2}}\right) d s \\
& +\frac{1}{\Delta t} \int_{n \Delta t}^{(n+1) \Delta t} \frac{1}{24}\left(s-t_{n+\frac{1}{2}}\right)^{4} \frac{\partial^{4}}{\partial t^{4}} B_{f}\left(\xi^{n+\frac{1}{2}}\right) d s
\end{aligned}
$$

Consequently, we obtain

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \sum_{n=0}^{j}\left(\mathcal{R}^{n+\frac{3}{2}}-\mathcal{R}^{n+\frac{1}{2}}, D\left(U^{n+2}-U^{n}\right)\right) \\
= & \Delta t \sum_{n=0}^{j}\left(D^{\prime} I_{1}^{n+1}, C\left(U^{n+2}-U^{n}\right)\right)+\Delta t \sum_{n=0}^{j}\left(D^{\prime} I_{2}^{n+1}, C\left(U^{n+2}-U^{n}\right)\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

By the mean value theorem, there exist $\eta^{n+1} \in\left(\left(n+\frac{1}{2}\right) \Delta t,\left(n+\frac{3}{2}\right) \Delta t\right)$ such that

$$
I_{1}^{n+1}=-\frac{1}{24}(\Delta t)^{3} \dddot{B}_{f}\left(\eta^{n+1}\right)
$$

By summation by parts, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\sum_{n=0}^{j}\left(D^{\prime} I_{1}^{n+1}, C\left(U^{n+2}-U^{n}\right)\right)= & \left(D^{\prime} I_{1}^{j+1}, C U^{j+2}\right)+\left(D^{\prime} I_{1}^{j}, C U^{j+1}\right) \\
& -\sum_{n=2}^{j+1}\left(D^{\prime}\left(I_{1}^{n+1}-I_{1}^{n-1}\right), C U^{n}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

By the Cauchy-Schwarz inequality,

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left(D^{\prime} I_{1}^{j+1}, C U^{j+2}\right) & \leq K\left\|I_{1}^{j+1}\right\|_{W}\left\|U^{j+2}\right\|_{V} \\
& \leq K(\Delta t)^{3} \max _{2 \leq n \leq N_{T}-1}\left\|U^{n}\right\|_{V}\left\|\dddot{B} \dddot{B}_{f}\left(\eta^{j+1}\right)\right\|_{W} \\
& \leq K h^{2} \Delta t \max _{2 \leq n \leq N_{T}-1}\left\|U^{n}\right\|_{V} \sum_{r=1}^{2}\left\|\dddot{\mathbf{B}}\left(\eta^{j+1}\right)\right\|_{H^{2}\left(\Omega_{r}\right)^{3}} \\
& \leq K h^{2} \Delta t \max _{2 \leq n \leq N_{T}-1}\left\|U^{n}\right\|_{V} \sum_{r=1}^{2}\|\mathbf{B}\|_{W^{4,1}\left(0, T ; H^{2}\left(\Omega_{r}\right)\right)^{3}}
\end{aligned}
$$

Similarly, we have

$$
\left(D^{\prime} I_{1}^{j}, C U^{j+1}\right) \leq K h^{2} \Delta t \max _{2 \leq n \leq N_{T}-1}\left\|U^{n}\right\|_{V} \sum_{r=1}^{2}\|\mathbf{B}\|_{W^{4,1}\left(0, T ; H^{2}\left(\Omega_{r}\right)\right)^{3}}
$$

By the definition of integral,

$$
\left(D^{\prime}\left(I_{1}^{n+1}-I_{1}^{n-1}\right), C U^{n}\right)=\int_{\eta^{n-1}}^{\eta^{n+1}}\left(D^{\prime} \frac{d I_{1}}{d t}, C U^{n}\right) d s
$$

So,

$$
-\sum_{n=2}^{j}\left(D^{\prime}\left(I_{1}^{n+1}-I_{1}^{n-1}\right), C U^{n}\right) \leq K \sum_{n=2}^{j} \int_{\eta^{n-1}}^{\eta^{n+1}}\left\|\frac{d I_{1}}{d t}\right\|_{W}\left\|U^{n}\right\|_{V} d s
$$

Consequently, we obtain

$$
\begin{aligned}
& -\sum_{n=2}^{j}\left(D^{\prime}\left(I_{1}^{n+1}-I_{1}^{n-1}\right), C U^{n}\right) \\
\leq & K(\Delta t)^{3} \max _{2 \leq n \leq N_{T}-1}\left\|U^{n}\right\|_{V} \sum_{n=2}^{j} \int_{\eta^{n-1}}^{\eta^{n+1}}\left\|\frac{d^{4}}{d t^{4}} B_{f}\right\|_{W} d s \\
\leq & K h^{2} \Delta t \max _{2 \leq n \leq N_{T}-1}\left\|U^{n}\right\|_{V} \sum_{n=2}^{j} \int_{\eta^{n-1}}^{\eta^{n+1}} \sum_{r=1}^{2}\left\|\frac{\partial^{4} \mathbf{B}}{\partial t^{4}}\right\|_{H^{2}\left(\Omega_{r}\right)^{3}} d s \\
\leq & K h^{2} \Delta t \max _{2 \leq n \leq N_{T}-1}\left\|U^{n}\right\|_{V} \sum_{r=1}^{2}|\mathbf{B}|_{W^{4,1}\left(0, T ; H^{2}\left(\Omega_{r}\right)\right)^{3}} .
\end{aligned}
$$

By the definition of $I_{2}^{n+1}$, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \left(D^{\prime} I_{2}^{n+1}, C\left(U^{n+2}-U^{n}\right)\right) \\
= & -\frac{1}{\Delta t} \int_{(n+1) \Delta t}^{(n+2) \Delta t} \frac{1}{24}\left(s-t_{n+\frac{3}{2}}\right)^{4}\left(\frac{\partial^{4}}{\partial t^{4}} B_{f}\left(\xi^{n+\frac{3}{2}}\right), C\left(U^{n+2}-U^{n}\right)\right) d s \\
& +\frac{1}{\Delta t} \int_{n \Delta t}^{(n+1) \Delta t} \frac{1}{24}\left(s-t_{n+\frac{1}{2}}\right)^{4}\left(\frac{\partial^{4}}{\partial t^{4}} B_{f}\left(\xi^{n+\frac{1}{2}}\right), C\left(U^{n+2}-U^{n}\right)\right) d s .
\end{aligned}
$$

Hence,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \left|\left(D^{\prime} I_{2}^{n+1}, C\left(U^{n+2}-U^{n}\right)\right)\right| \\
\leq & \frac{1}{24}(\Delta t)^{3} \int_{(n+1) \Delta t}^{(n+2) \Delta t}\left\|\frac{\partial^{4}}{\partial t^{4}} B_{f}(s)\right\|_{W}\left\|U^{n+2}-U^{n}\right\|_{V} d s \\
& +\frac{1}{24}(\Delta t)^{3} \int_{n \Delta t}^{(n+1) \Delta t}\left\|\frac{\partial^{4}}{\partial t^{4}} B_{f}(s)\right\|_{W}\left\|U^{n+2}-U^{n}\right\|_{V} d s \\
\leq & \frac{1}{24}(\Delta t)^{3} \max _{2 \leq n \leq N_{T}-1}\left\|U^{n}\right\|_{V} \int_{n \Delta t}^{(n+2) \Delta t}\left\|\frac{\partial^{4}}{\partial t^{4}} B_{f}(s)\right\|_{W} d s .
\end{aligned}
$$

Since

$$
\left\|\frac{\partial^{4}}{\partial t^{4}} B_{f}(s)\right\|_{W} \leq K \sum_{r=1}^{2}\left\|\frac{\partial^{4} \mathbf{B}}{\partial t^{4}}\right\|_{H^{2}\left(\Omega_{r}\right)^{3}},
$$

we finally obtain

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \left|\sum_{n=0}^{j}\left(D^{\prime} I_{2}^{n+1}, C\left(U^{n+2}-U^{n}\right)\right)\right| \\
\leq & \frac{1}{24}(\Delta t)^{3} \max _{2 \leq n \leq N_{T}-1}\left\|U^{n}\right\|_{V} \sum_{n=0}^{j} \int_{n \Delta t}^{(n+2) \Delta t} \sum_{r=1}^{2}\left\|\frac{\partial^{4} \mathbf{B}}{\partial t^{4}}\right\|_{H^{2}\left(\Omega_{r}\right)^{3}} d s \\
\leq & \frac{1}{24}(\Delta t)^{3} \max _{2 \leq n \leq N_{T}-1}\left\|U^{n}\right\|_{V} \sum_{r=1}^{2}\|\mathbf{B}\|_{W^{4,1}\left(0, T ; H^{2}\left(\Omega_{r}\right)\right)^{3}} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Collecting terms in (i)-(iv), we obtain the desired result.

We now give our main estimate in this section.

Theorem 5.6 Assume that $\mathbf{B} \in W^{2,1}\left(0, T ; H^{3}\left(\Omega_{i}\right)\right)^{3} \cap W^{4,1}\left(0, T ; H^{2}\left(\Omega_{r}\right)\right)^{3}, \mathbf{E} \in$ $W^{1,1}\left(0, T ; H^{3}\left(\Omega_{r}\right)\right)^{3}$, for $i=1,2$, satisfy (1.1)-(1.4), $\mathbf{J} \in W^{2,1}\left(0, T ; H^{2}(\Omega)\right)^{3}$ and $\mathbf{J}_{\Gamma} \in W^{2,1}\left(0, T ; H^{3}(\Gamma)\right)^{3}$. Let $\left(E^{n}, B^{n+\frac{1}{2}}\right), 0 \leq n \leq N_{T}-1$, be the solution of (5.2)-(5.3) on uniform grids. Then under the stability condition

$$
\begin{equation*}
c_{m} \Delta t<\frac{\min \left(h_{i j}\right)}{2 M_{2}} \tag{5.40}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $M_{2}$ is the maximum of the ratios of the maximum to minimum edge lengths over the union of adjacent elements, and

$$
c_{m}^{2}:=\frac{1}{\min \left(\epsilon_{1}, \epsilon_{2}\right) \min \left(\mu_{1}, \mu_{2}\right)},
$$

we have

$$
\begin{align*}
& \max _{0 \leq n \leq N_{T}-1}\left(\left\|E^{n}-E_{e}^{n}\right\|_{W^{\prime}}+\left\|B^{n+\frac{1}{2}}-B_{f}^{n+\frac{1}{2}}\right\|_{W}\right. \\
& \leq K h^{2}\left(\sum_{r=1}^{2}\left(\|\mathbf{B}\|_{W^{2,1}\left(0, T ; H^{3}\left(\Omega_{r}\right)\right)^{3}}+\|\mathbf{B}\|_{W^{4,1}\left(0, T ; H^{2}\left(\Omega_{r}\right)\right)^{3}}+\|\mathbf{E}\|_{W^{1,1}\left(0, T ; H^{3}\left(\Omega_{r}\right)\right)^{3}}\right)\right. \\
& \left.\quad+\|\mathbf{J}\|_{W^{2,1}\left(0, T ; H^{2}(\Omega)\right)^{2}}+\left\|\mathbf{J}_{\Gamma}\right\|_{W^{2,1}\left(0, T ; H^{3}(\Gamma)\right)^{3}}\right) . \tag{5.41}
\end{align*}
$$

Proof. From (5.3), we have

$$
S\left(B^{n+\frac{3}{2}}-B^{n+\frac{1}{2}}\right)+\Delta t C E^{n+1}=0
$$

So,

$$
\begin{equation*}
S\left(\left(B^{n+\frac{3}{2}}-B_{f}^{n+\frac{3}{2}}\right)-\left(B^{n+\frac{1}{2}}-B_{f}^{n+\frac{1}{2}}\right)\right)+\Delta t C\left(E^{n+1}-E_{e}^{n+1}\right)=\mathcal{P}^{n+1} \tag{5.42}
\end{equation*}
$$

where

$$
\mathcal{P}^{n+1}:=-S B_{f}^{n+\frac{3}{2}}+S B_{f}^{n+\frac{1}{2}}-\Delta t C E_{e}^{n+1}
$$

From (4.23), we rewrite $\mathcal{P}^{n+1}$ as

$$
\mathcal{P}^{n+1}=S \Delta t\left(\dot{B}_{f}^{n+1}-\frac{1}{\Delta t} \int_{\left(n+\frac{1}{2}\right) \Delta t}^{\left(n+\frac{3}{2}\right) \Delta t} \dot{B}_{f} d s\right) .
$$

Multiplying both sides of (5.42) by $D^{\prime}\left(\left(B^{n+\frac{3}{2}}-B_{f}^{n+\frac{3}{2}}\right)+\left(B^{n+\frac{1}{2}}-B_{f}^{n+\frac{1}{2}}\right)\right)$ and summing up all the equations from $n=0$ to $n=j$, where $0 \leq j \leq N_{T}-2$, we obtain

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \left(S\left(B^{j+\frac{3}{2}}-B_{f}^{j+\frac{3}{2}}\right), D^{\prime}\left(B^{j+\frac{3}{2}}-B_{f}^{j+\frac{3}{2}}\right)\right) \\
= & -\Delta t \sum_{n=0}^{j}\left(C\left(E^{n+1}-E_{e}^{n+1}\right), D^{\prime}\left(\left(B^{n+\frac{3}{2}}-B_{f}^{n+\frac{3}{2}}\right)+\left(B^{n+\frac{1}{2}}-B_{f}^{n+\frac{1}{2}}\right)\right)\right) \\
& +\sum_{n=0}^{j}\left(\mathcal{P}^{n+1}, D^{\prime}\left(\left(B^{n+\frac{3}{2}}-B_{f}^{n+\frac{3}{2}}\right)+\left(B^{n+\frac{1}{2}}-B_{f}^{n+\frac{1}{2}}\right)\right)\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

By the Cauchy-Schwarz inequality,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \left|-\Delta t \sum_{n=0}^{j}\left(C\left(E^{n+1}-E_{e}^{n+1}\right), D^{\prime}\left(\left(B^{n+\frac{3}{2}}-B_{f}^{n+\frac{3}{2}}\right)+\left(B^{n+\frac{1}{2}}-B_{f}^{n+\frac{1}{2}}\right)\right)\right)\right| \\
\leq & \Delta t \sum_{n=0}^{N_{T}-2}\left\|E^{n+1}-E_{e}^{n+1}\right\|_{V}\left(\left\|B^{n+\frac{3}{2}}-B_{f}^{n+\frac{3}{2}}\right\|_{W}+\left\|B^{n+\frac{1}{2}}-B_{f}^{n+\frac{1}{2}}\right\|_{W}\right) \\
\leq & \max _{0 \leq n \leq N_{T}-1}\left\|E^{n}-E_{e}^{n}\right\|_{V} \max _{0 \leq n \leq N_{T}-1}\left\|B^{n+\frac{1}{2}}-B_{f}^{n+\frac{1}{2}}\right\|_{W},
\end{aligned}
$$

where the last step follows from the fact that

$$
\Delta t \sum_{n=0}^{N_{T}-2} 1 \leq K
$$

Since

$$
\dot{B}_{f}^{n+1}-\frac{1}{\Delta t} \int_{\left(n+\frac{1}{2}\right) \Delta t}^{\left(n+\frac{3}{2}\right) \Delta t} \dot{B}_{f} d s
$$

defines a bounded linear functional which vanishes for any linear functions, so

$$
\left|\dot{B}_{f}^{n+1}-\frac{1}{\Delta t} \int_{\left(n+\frac{1}{2}\right) \Delta t}^{\left(n+\frac{3}{2}\right) \Delta t} \dot{B}_{f} d s\right| \leq K(\Delta t) \int_{\left(n+\frac{1}{2}\right) \Delta t}^{\left(n+\frac{3}{2}\right) \Delta t}\left|\dddot{B}_{f}\right| d s .
$$

By the Cauchy-Schwarz inequality,

$$
\left|\dot{B}_{f}^{n+1}-\frac{1}{\Delta t} \int_{\left(n+\frac{1}{2}\right) \Delta t}^{\left(n+\frac{3}{2}\right) \Delta t} \dot{B}_{f} d s\right|^{2} \leq K(\Delta t)^{3} \int_{\left(n+\frac{1}{2}\right) \Delta t}^{\left(n+\frac{3}{2}\right) \Delta t}\left|\dddot{B}_{f}\right|^{2} d s .
$$

Hence,

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left\|S^{-1} \mathcal{P}^{n+1}\right\|_{W}^{2} & =\sum_{i=1}^{F_{1}} s_{i} \bar{h}_{i}^{\prime}\left|s_{i} \mathcal{P}_{i}^{n+1}\right|^{2} \\
& \leq K(\Delta t)^{5} \int_{\left(n+\frac{1}{2}\right) \Delta t}^{\left(n+\frac{3}{2}\right) \Delta t} \sum_{i=1}^{F_{1}} s_{i} \bar{h}_{i}^{\prime}\left|\dddot{B}_{f}\right|_{i}^{2} d s \\
& \leq K(\Delta t)^{5} \int_{\left(n+\frac{1}{2}\right) \Delta t}^{\left(n+\frac{3}{2}\right) \Delta t} \sum_{r=1}^{2}|\dddot{\mathbf{B}}|_{H^{2}\left(\Omega_{r}\right)^{3}}^{2} d s .
\end{aligned}
$$

Consequently, we obtain

$$
\begin{aligned}
\sum_{n=0}^{N_{T}-2}\left\|S^{-1} \mathcal{P}^{n+1}\right\|_{W} & \leq\left(N_{T}-1\right)^{\frac{1}{2}}\left(\sum_{n=0}^{N_{T}-2}\left\|S^{-1} \mathcal{P}^{n+1}\right\|_{W}^{2}\right)^{\frac{1}{2}} \\
& \leq K(\Delta t)^{2}\left(\sum_{n=0}^{N_{T}-2} \int_{\left(n+\frac{1}{2}\right) \Delta t}^{\left(n+\frac{3}{2}\right) \Delta t} \sum_{r=1}^{2}|\dddot{\mathbf{B}}|_{H^{2}\left(\Omega_{r}\right)^{3}}^{2} d s\right)^{\frac{1}{2}} \\
& \leq K h^{2} \sum_{r=1}^{2}|\mathbf{B}|_{H^{3}\left(0, T ; H^{2}\left(\Omega_{r}\right)\right)^{3}}
\end{aligned}
$$

By Theorem 5.5, we have the estimate for $B^{n+\frac{1}{2}}-B_{f}^{n+\frac{1}{2}}$.
Now, we give the estimate for $E^{n}-E_{e}^{n}$. For any $0 \leq n \leq N_{T}-1$ with $C\left(E^{n}-E_{e}^{n}\right) \neq 0$, by Lemma 3.5, we have

$$
\left\|E^{n}-E_{e}^{n}\right\|_{W^{\prime}} \leq K\left\|E^{n}-E_{e}^{n}\right\|_{V}
$$

Hence, by Theorem 5.5, we obtain

$$
\begin{align*}
& \left\|E^{n}-E_{e}^{n}\right\|_{W^{\prime}} \\
\leq & K h^{2}\left(\sum_{r=1}^{2}\|\mathbf{B}\|_{W^{2,1}\left(0, T ; H^{3}\left(\Omega_{r}\right)\right)^{3}}+\sum_{r=1}^{2}\|\mathbf{B}\|_{W^{4,1}\left(0, T ; H^{2}\left(\Omega_{r}\right)\right)^{3}}\right.  \tag{5.43}\\
& \left.+\|\mathbf{J}\|_{W^{2,1}\left(0, T ; H^{2}(\Omega)\right)^{2}}+\left\|\mathbf{J}_{\Gamma}\right\|_{W^{2,1}\left(0, T ; H^{3}(\Gamma)\right)^{3}}\right) .
\end{align*}
$$

For any $n$ with $C\left(E^{n}-E_{e}^{n}\right)=0$, the proof is complete by proving the following Lemma 5.5.

Lemma 5.5 Suppose that $\mathbf{B} \in W^{2,1}\left(0, T ; H^{3}\left(\Omega_{r}\right)\right)^{3}$ and $\mathbf{E} \in W^{1,1}\left(0, T ; H^{3}\left(\Omega_{r}\right)\right)^{3}$, for $r=1,2$, is the true solution of (1.1)-(1.4), and that $\mathbf{J} \in W^{2,1}\left(0, T ; H^{2}(\Omega)\right)^{3}$ and $\mathbf{J}_{\Gamma} \in W^{2,1}\left(0, T ; H^{3}(\Gamma)\right)^{3}$. Let $E^{n}$ be the solution of (5.2)-(5.3) on uniform grid with $C\left(E^{n}-E_{e}^{n}\right)=0$ for all $n_{1}<n<n_{2}$. Then

$$
\begin{align*}
& \max _{n_{1}<n<n_{2}}\left\|E^{n}-E_{e}^{n}\right\|_{W^{\prime}} \\
\leq & K h^{2}\left(\sum_{r=1}^{2}\|\mathbf{B}\|_{W^{2,1}\left(0, T ; H^{3}\left(\Omega_{r}\right)\right)^{3}}+\sum_{r=1}^{2}\|\mathbf{E}\|_{W^{1,1}\left(0, T ; H^{3}\left(\Omega_{r}\right)\right)^{3}}\right.  \tag{5.44}\\
& \left.+\|\mathbf{J}\|_{W^{2,1}\left(0, T ; H^{2}(\Omega)\right)^{3}}+\left\|\mathbf{J}_{\Gamma}\right\|_{W^{2,1}\left(0, T ; H^{3}(\Gamma)\right)^{3}}\right) .
\end{align*}
$$

Proof. For any $n_{1}<n<n_{2}$ with $C\left(E^{n}-E_{e}^{n}\right)=0$, by Lemma 3.7, there exist $\phi^{n} \in \mathbb{R}^{L}$ such that

$$
D\left(E^{n}-E_{e}^{n}\right)=B_{1}^{\prime} \phi^{n}
$$

With the definition of $U^{n}$, for any $n_{1}<n<n_{2}-1$, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left(S^{\prime}\left(U^{n+1}-U^{n}\right), D\left(U^{n+1}+U^{n}\right)\right) & =\left(S^{\prime}\left(U^{n+1}-U^{n}\right), B_{1}^{\prime}\left(\phi^{n+1}+\phi^{n}\right)\right) \\
& =\left(\mathcal{D}^{\prime}\left(U^{n+1}-U^{n}\right), \phi^{n+1}+\phi^{n}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

By Theorem 5.3, we apply a similar procedure as in the proof of Lemma 4.6 to $\mathcal{D}^{\prime} U^{n+1}$ and $\mathcal{D}^{\prime} U^{n}$, we obtain

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \left(S^{\prime}\left(U^{n+1}-U^{n}\right), D\left(U^{n+1}+U^{n}\right)\right) \\
= & \left(S^{\prime}\left(\left(E_{f}^{\prime}-\Pi_{h} E_{f}^{\prime}\right)\left(t_{n+1}\right)-\left(E_{f}^{\prime}-\Pi_{h} E_{f}^{\prime}\right)\left(t_{n}\right)\right), D\left(U^{n+1}+U^{n}\right)\right) \\
& +\left(S^{\prime}\left(\left(E_{p}^{n+1}-E_{e}^{n+1}\right)-\left(E_{p}^{n}-E_{e}^{n}\right)\right), D\left(U^{n+1}+U^{n}\right)\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

For $n=n_{1}$, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \left(S^{\prime}\left(U^{n_{1}+1}-U^{n_{1}}\right), D\left(U^{n_{1}+1}+U^{n_{1}}\right)\right) \\
= & \left(S^{\prime}\left(U^{n_{1}+1}-U^{n_{1}}\right), B_{1}^{\prime} \phi^{n_{1}+1}\right)+\left(S^{\prime}\left(U^{n_{1}+1}-U^{n_{1}}\right), D U^{n_{1}}\right) \\
= & \left(\mathcal{D}^{\prime}\left(U^{n_{1}+1}-U^{n_{1}}\right), \phi^{n_{1}+1}\right)+\left(S^{\prime}\left(U^{n_{1}+1}-U^{n_{1}}\right), D U^{n_{1}}\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

By Theorem 5.3 and the proof of Lemma 4.6, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left(S^{\prime}\left(U^{n_{1}+1}-U^{n_{1}}\right),\right. & \left.D\left(U^{n_{1}+1}+U^{n_{1}}\right)\right)=\left(S^{\prime}\left(U^{n_{1}+1}-U^{n_{1}}\right), D U^{n_{1}}\right) \\
& +\left(S^{\prime}\left(\left(E_{f}^{\prime}-\Pi_{h} E_{f}^{\prime}\right)\left(t_{n_{1}+1}\right)-\left(E_{f}^{\prime}-\Pi_{h} E_{f}^{\prime}\right)\left(t_{n_{1}}\right)\right), D U^{n_{1}+1}\right) \\
& +\left(S^{\prime}\left(\left(E_{p}^{n_{1}+1}-E_{e}^{n_{1}+1}\right)-\left(E_{p}^{n_{1}}-E_{e}^{n_{1}}\right)\right), D U^{n_{1}+1}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

Hence, for any $n_{1}<j<n_{2}-1$, we obtain

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \quad \sum_{n=n_{1}}^{j}\left(S^{\prime}\left(U^{n+1}-U^{n}\right), D\left(U^{n+1}+U^{n}\right)\right) \\
& =\sum_{n=n_{1}+1}^{j}\left\{\left(S^{\prime}\left(\left(E_{f}^{\prime}-\Pi_{h} E_{f}^{\prime}\right)\left(t_{n+1}\right)-\left(E_{f}^{\prime}-\Pi_{h} E_{f}^{\prime}\right)\left(t_{n}\right)\right), D\left(U^{n+1}+U^{n}\right)\right)\right. \\
& \left.\quad+\left(S^{\prime}\left(\left(E_{p}^{n+1}-E_{e}^{n+1}\right)-\left(E_{p}^{n}-E_{e}^{n}\right)\right), D\left(U^{n+1}+U^{n}\right)\right)\right\} \\
& \quad+\left(S^{\prime}\left(\left(E_{f}^{\prime}-\Pi_{h} E_{f}^{\prime}\right)\left(t_{n_{1}+1}\right)-\left(E_{f}^{\prime}-\Pi_{h} E_{f}^{\prime}\right)\left(t_{n_{1}}\right)\right), D U^{n_{1}+1}\right) \\
& \quad+\left(S^{\prime}\left(\left(E_{p}^{n_{1}+1}-E_{e}^{n_{1}+1}\right)-\left(E_{p}^{n_{1}}-E_{e}^{n_{1}}\right)\right), D U^{n_{1}+1}\right) \\
& \quad+\left(S^{\prime}\left(U^{n_{1}+1}-U^{n_{1}}\right), D U^{n_{1}}\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

For $n_{1} \leq n \leq j$, we observe that

$$
\left(E_{f}^{\prime}-\Pi_{h} E_{f}^{\prime}\right)\left(t_{n+1}\right)-\left(E_{f}^{\prime}-\Pi_{h} E_{f}^{\prime}\right)\left(t_{n}\right)=\int_{n \Delta t}^{(n+1) \Delta t}\left(\dot{E}_{f}^{\prime}-\Pi_{h} \dot{E}_{f}^{\prime}\right) d s
$$

and that

$$
\left(E_{p}^{n+1}-E_{e}^{n+1}\right)-\left(E_{p}^{n}-E_{e}^{n}\right)=\int_{n \Delta t}^{(n+1) \Delta t}\left(\dot{E}_{p}-\dot{E}_{e}\right) d s
$$

By the Cauchy-Schwarz inequality,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \sum_{n=n_{1}}^{j}\left(S^{\prime}\left(U^{n+1}-U^{n}\right), D\left(U^{n+1}+U^{n}\right)\right) \\
\leq & \max _{n_{1}<n<n_{2}}\left\|U^{n}\right\|_{W^{\prime}} \int_{n_{1} \Delta t}^{n_{2} \Delta t}\left(\left\|\dot{E}_{f}^{\prime}-\Pi_{h} \dot{E}_{f}^{\prime}\right\|_{W^{\prime}}+\left\|\dot{E}_{p}-\dot{E}_{e}\right\|_{W^{\prime}}\right) d s \\
& +\left(S^{\prime}\left(U^{n_{1}+1}-U^{n_{1}}\right), D U^{n_{1}}\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

Consequently,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \left(S^{\prime} U^{j+1}, D U^{j+1}\right) \\
\leq & \max _{n_{1}<n<n_{2}}\left\|U^{n}\right\|_{W^{\prime}} \int_{n_{1} \Delta t}^{n_{2} \Delta t}\left(\left\|\dot{E}_{f}^{\prime}-\Pi_{h} \dot{E}_{f}^{\prime}\right\|_{W^{\prime}}+\left\|\dot{E}_{p}-\dot{E}_{e}\right\|_{W^{\prime}}\right) d s \\
& +\left(S^{\prime} U^{n_{1}}, D U^{n_{1}}\right)+\left(S^{\prime} U^{n_{1}+1}, D U^{n_{1}}\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

In the proof of Lemma 4.6, we already have the estimate for $\left\|\dot{E}_{f}^{\prime}-\Pi_{h} \dot{E}_{f}^{\prime}\right\|_{W^{\prime}}$ and $\left\|\dot{E}_{p}-\dot{E}_{e}\right\|_{W^{\prime}}$. Also, by (5.43), we have the estimate for $\left(S^{\prime} U^{n_{1}}, D U^{n_{1}}\right)$. For the remaining term, we estimate in the following way

$$
\left(S^{\prime} U^{n_{1}+1}, D U^{n_{1}}\right) \leq\left\|U^{n_{1}+1}\right\|_{W^{\prime}}\left\|U^{n_{1}}\right\|_{W^{\prime}} \leq\left(\max _{n_{1}<n<n_{2}}\left\|U^{n}\right\|_{W^{\prime}}\right)\left\|U^{n_{1}}\right\|_{W^{\prime}}
$$

Since $C U^{n_{1}} \neq 0$, we have the desired estimate by (5.43).

We remark here that Theorem 5.6 shows our fully discrete finite volume approximation of the Maxwell's equations is second order in $W$ and $W^{\prime}$-norm for rectangular domains. So, it is an optimal error estimate.

## Chapter 6

## Numerical Tests

In this chapter, we apply the finite volume method (5.2)-(5.3) to solve the Maxwell's system (1.1)-(1.4) in nonhomogeneous media. It can be seen from the numerical examples below that the convergence of the scheme is indeed of second order for the considered Maxwell's equations with discontinuous physical coefficients.

### 6.1 Convergence test

Let $\Omega \times[0, T]=[0,1]^{3} \times[0,1]$ and $\Omega_{1}=\left[\frac{1}{3}, \frac{2}{3}\right]^{3}$. We triangulate the domain $\Omega$ into smaller equal cuboids with $N_{D}$ being the number of grid points in each axis direction, and divide $[0, T]$ into $N_{T}$ equal subintervals. We assume the media are equipped with the following discontinuous physical parameters:

$$
\epsilon=\left\{\begin{array}{ll}
0.1 & \text { in } \Omega_{1} \\
2 & \text { in } \Omega_{2}
\end{array} \quad, \quad \mu= \begin{cases}0.05 & \text { in } \Omega_{1} \\
1 & \text { in } \Omega_{2}\end{cases}\right.
$$

To check the accuracy of the finite volume method (5.2)-(5.3), we construct the Maxwell's system (1.1)-(1.4) with its exact solutions given by

$$
\mathbf{E}=\left[\begin{array}{l}
-e^{\pi t} \cos (2 \pi x) \sin (2 \pi y) \sin (2 \pi z) \\
-e^{\pi t} \sin (2 \pi x) \cos (2 \pi y) \sin (2 \pi z) \\
-e^{\pi t} \sin (2 \pi x) \sin (2 \pi y) \cos (2 \pi z)
\end{array}\right]
$$

$$
\mathbf{B}=\left[\begin{array}{l}
-0.05 \cos (2 \pi x) \sin (2 \pi y) \sin (2 \pi z)+x \\
-0.05 \sin (2 \pi x) \cos (2 \pi y) \sin (2 \pi z)-y \\
-0.05 \sin (2 \pi x) \sin (2 \pi y) \cos (2 \pi z)+1
\end{array}\right]
$$

We note that both $\mathbf{E}$ and $\mathbf{B}$ are continuous in $\Omega$, but $\mathbf{H}=\frac{1}{\mu} \mathbf{B}$ and $\mathbf{D}=\epsilon \mathbf{E}$ are discontinuous across the interface. We can verify that the exact solution ( $\mathbf{E}, \mathbf{B}$ ) satisfies the interface conditions

$$
[\mathbf{E} \times \mathbf{m}]=0 \quad, \quad[\mathbf{B} \cdot \mathbf{m}]=0
$$

Solving the fully discrete finite volume system (5.2)-(5.3), we obtain the following result:

| $N_{T}$ | $N_{D}$ | error | ratio |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| 180 | 6 | 0.6166 | - |
| 360 | 12 | 0.1777 | 3.47 |
| 720 | 24 | 0.0475 | 3.74 |
| 1440 | 48 | 0.0123 | 3.86 |
| 2880 | 96 | 0.0031 | 3.97 |

Table 1: Convergence rate for the first example
where the errors are the discrete $L^{2}$-norm errors between the true solution ( $\mathbf{E}, \mathbf{B}$ ) and the finite volume solution $(E, B)$ with the norms calculated using (3.2) and (3.4), namely

$$
\max _{0 \leq n \leq N_{T}-1}\left\{\left\|E^{n}-E_{e}^{n}\right\|_{W^{\prime}}+\left\|B^{n+\frac{1}{2}}-B_{f}^{n+\frac{1}{2}}\right\|_{W}\right\}
$$

From the table above, we see that the convergence rate is approximately $O\left(h^{2}\right)$, that indicates the second order accuracy of the proposed finite volume method (5.2)-(5.3).

Our second example is concerned with the Maxwell's system (1.1)-(1.4) with the following true solutions

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \mathbf{E}_{\mathbf{1}}=\left[\begin{array}{l}
-e^{\pi t} \cos (6 \pi x) \sin (6 \pi y) \sin (6 \pi z)+\cos (2 \pi x) \sin (2 \pi y) \sin (2 \pi z) \\
-e^{\pi t} \sin (6 \pi x) \cos (6 \pi y) \sin (6 \pi z)+\sin (2 \pi x) \cos (2 \pi y) \sin (2 \pi z) \\
-e^{\pi t} \sin (6 \pi x) \sin (6 \pi y) \cos (6 \pi z)+\sin (2 \pi x) \sin (2 \pi y) \cos (2 \pi z)
\end{array}\right] \\
& \mathbf{E}_{\mathbf{2}}=\left[\begin{array}{l}
-\left(e^{\pi t}+1\right) \cos (6 \pi x) \sin (6 \pi y) \sin (6 \pi z)+\cos (2 \pi x) \sin (2 \pi y) \sin (2 \pi z) \\
-\left(e^{\pi t}+1\right) \sin (6 \pi x) \cos (6 \pi y) \sin (6 \pi z)+\sin (2 \pi x) \cos (2 \pi y) \sin (2 \pi z) \\
-\left(e^{\pi t}+1\right) \sin (6 \pi x) \sin (6 \pi y) \cos (6 \pi z)+\sin (2 \pi x) \sin (2 \pi y) \cos (2 \pi z)
\end{array}\right]
\end{aligned}
$$

where $\mathbf{E}_{i}=\left.\mathbf{E}\right|_{\Omega_{i}}$, for $i=1,2$, and $\mathbf{B}$ is the same as above. In this example, $\mathbf{H}$ field and the normal component of $\mathbf{E}$ is discontinuous across the interface $\Gamma$. Solving the system with the finite volume method (5.2)-(5.3), we obtain the following result:

| $N_{T}$ | $N_{D}$ | error | ratio |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| 360 | 12 | 1.6090 | - |
| 720 | 24 | 0.4851 | 3.32 |
| 1440 | 48 | 0.1312 | 3.70 |
| 2880 | 96 | 0.0341 | 3.85 |
| 5760 | 192 | 0.0087 | 3.92 |

Table 2: Convergence rate for the second example
We see that the convergence rate is $O\left(h^{2}\right)$, which again demonstrates the second order accuracy of the numerical method (5.2)-(5.3).

### 6.2 Electromagnetic scattering

We now present a numerical experiment for an electromagnetic scattering problem by our finite volume method. Assume that a plane wave source is given on the
boundary $x=0$. We choose the source as given by

$$
E_{y}=\sin \left(4 \pi\left(x-c_{2} t\right)\right), \quad H_{z}=\epsilon_{2} c_{2} \sin \left(4 \pi\left(x-c_{2} t\right)\right)
$$

where $c_{2}=\left(\epsilon_{2} \mu_{2}\right)^{-\frac{1}{2}}$ is the speed of light in the medium occupied by $\Omega_{2}$. Note that both the electric and magnetic fields propagate in the $x$-direction. The numerical solution of the electric field $E_{y}$ is shown in the following figure:


Figure 3: Numerical solution of $E_{y}$
where in figure 3 the dotted line, dash dot line, dash line and solid line represent respectively the snap shots of the electric field patterns at times $t=$ $0.25,0.5,0.75,1$. In addition, the vertical axis denotes the amplitude of the field strength while the horizontal axis denotes the position in $x$-direction. We remark that the amplitudes of the waves have been doubled so that it looks clearer. The plot in figure 3 corresponds to the pattern of the electric field which does not pass through the inhomogeneous part of $\Omega$, that is $\Omega_{1}$. It shows that the electric field propagates smoothly in the $x$-direction.

In figure 4 , we give the numerical solution of the magnetic flux density $B_{z}$ and we have shown the snap shots of patterns of the magnetic flux density which passes through the inhomogeneous part of $\Omega$, that is $\Omega_{1}$. From the figure, we see that the wave propagates in the $x$-direction, but there are discontinuities when
the wave passes through the interface between $\Omega_{1}$ and $\Omega_{2}$. We remark that the amplitudes of the waves have been doubled and all the notations in figure 4 are defined similarly as figure 3 .


Figure 4: Numerical solution of $B_{z}$

## Bibliography

[1] R. A. Adams. Sobolev spaces. Academic Press, 1975.
[2] J. H. Bramble and J. Xu. Some estimates for a weighted $L^{2}$ projection. Math. Comp., 56 (1991), pp. 463-476.
[3] J. S. Chen and K. S. Yee The finite-difference time-domain and the finitevolume time-domain methods in solving Maxwell's equations. IEEE Trans. Antennas Propagat., 45 (1997), pp. 354-363.
[4] Z. Chen, Q. Du and J. Zou. Finite element methods with matching and non-matching meshes for Maxwell equations with discontinuous coefficients. SIAM J. Numer. Anal., 37 (2000), pp. 1542-1570.
[5] Z. Chen and J. Zou. Finite element methods and their convergence for elliptic and parabolic interface problems. Numerische Mathematik, 79 (1998), pp. 175-202.
[6] T. S. Chung and J. Zou. A finite volume method for Maxwell's equations with discontinuous physical coefficients. Submitted.
[7] P. G. Ciarlet. The finite element method for elliptic problems. North-Holland Publishing Company, 1978.
[8] P. Ciarlet, Jr. and J. Zou. Fully discrete finite element approaches for timedependent Maxwell equations. Numerische Mathematik, 82 (1999), pp. 193219.
[9] M. Dryja and O. B. Widlund. Domain decomposition algorithms with small overlap. SIAM J. Sci. Comput., 15 (1994), pp. 604-620.
[10] G. Duvaut and J. Lions. Inequalities in Mechanics and Physics. SpringerVerlag, New York, 1976.
[11] D. Gilbarg and N. S. Trudinger. Elliptic partial differential equations of second order. Springer-Verlag, Berlin Heidelberg, 1977.
[12] S. Fortune. Voronoi diagrams and Delaunay triangulations. Computing in Euclidean geometry, World Scientific, Singapore (1992), pp. 193-233.
[13] V. Girault and P. A. Raviart. Finite element approximation of the NavierStokes equations. Springer-Verlag, New York, 1979.
[14] J. Jin. The finite element method in electromagnetics. John Wiley and Sons, Inc.
[15] Z. Li and J. Zou. Theoretical and numerical analysis on a thermo-elastic system with discontinuities. J. Comput. Appl. Math., 92 (1998), pp. 37-58.
[16] J. L. Lions and E. Magenes. Non-homogeneous boundary value problems and applications I. Springer-Verlag, Berlin, Heidelberg, 1972.
[17] P. Monk. Analysis of a finite element method for Maxwell's equations. SIAM J. Numer. Anal., 29 (1992), pp. 714-729.
[18] P. Monk and E. Süli. A convergence analysis of Yee's scheme on nonuniform grids. SIAM J. Numer. Anal., 31 (1994), pp. 393-412.
[19] R. A. Nicolaides. Direct discretization of planer div-curl problems. SIAM J. Numer. Anal., 29 (1992), pp. 32-56.
[20] R. A. Nicolaides and D. Q. Wang. Convergence analysis of a covolume scheme for Maxwell's equations in three dimensions. Math. Comp., 67 (1998), pp. 947-963.
[21] R. A. Nicolaides and X. Wu. Covolume solutions of three-dimensional divcurl equations. SIAM J. Numer. Anal., 34 (1997), pp. 2195-2203.
[22] P. A. Raviart. Finite element approximation of the time dependent Maxwell equations. Technical Report GdR SPARCH \#6, Ecole Polytechnique, France.
[23] A. Taflove. Computational electrodynamics. Artech House, Inc., 1995.
[24] K. S. Yee. Numerical solution of initial boundary value problems involving Maxwell's equations in isotropic media. IEEE Trans. Antennas Propagat., 14 (1966), pp. 302-307.

## CUHK Libraries

|||||||||||| |||||||||||||||

003803549

